

**From Here to Eternity**  
**Overcoming in this life in preparation for the next**

By  
Raymond D. Mossie, M.D.  
(Emphasis added)

**I. The plan of God for mankind reviewed -**

*God created humans for a specific purpose which is detailed in other teachings, (e.g., 'Christianity 101' and 'Why the Flesh') and the book, Who Said That You Should be Perfect?.*

***The following is a brief review:***

*We were made in order to potentially become replacements for Lucifer, (now called Satan, though the Bible calls him by many names such as prince or king of Babylon, king of Tyre, Beelzebub, etc.) and the other fallen one third of the angels, (now known as demon spirits). When these spirit beings rebelled against God, they were cast out of heaven and back down to the earth, of which Lucifer was in charge. This event destroyed the face of this beautiful planet and killed every living mortal creature that was here, leaving the face of the planet desolate. God then flooded the earth and washed away everything. He did this long before the flood of Noah. Lucifer had been in charge of the earth for many years before God created Adam. At that time, Lucifer had it all. He had looks, intelligence, wisdom, musical and vocal talent, and position of authority as ruler of the planet. He also had great wealth and immortality. He was in the Garden of Eden long before Adam. However even with all that God had given him, it was not enough. Lucifer wanted more. Because he had become very wealthy, Lucifer thought that he could take over heaven and do God's job, (see the teaching 'Show Me the Money'). When this thought came into his head, the sin of pride came into his heart and he acted on this misguided notion. Pride may be defined as stealing God's glory, (see the teaching, 'Pride'). As we have seen in other teachings, God's glory is in one sense the revelatory knowledge of the Father, (see the teaching 'KNOWLEDGE - The Key to Perfection'). Lucifer's rebellion forever sealed his fate. He is now doomed to spend his eternity in the lake of fire. Once Lucifer had been dealt with, God developed a 'back-up plan'. He decided to create 'replacements' for Lucifer and his buddies. Since God had lost a large portion of His extended 'family', He wanted new replacement members that He could rely upon never to make the same mistake that the misguided Lucifer and his followers had made. God decided that for the group of replacements He would take a different approach. He would create these beings, (i.e., humans) with immortal POTENTIAL, but they would have to prove ahead of time that they deserved immortality BEFORE they would be granted eternal life. That proof of eternal life would come as a result of obedience. Two of the obedient acts would be to repent of their sins, believe in and accept the Son of God, Jesus Christ as their Lord and Savior. Anyone who rejected the Son of God would by definition NOT be worthy of eternal life, (see Genesis 1:1-2, Isaiah 14:3-17, Ezekiel 28:11-19, Luke 10:18, 20:27-40, John 12:31, 14:6, Acts 4:8-12, Revelation 12:3-4, Vv.7-9 and 20:10).*

**Genesis 1:1-2 -**

<sup>1</sup>In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. <sup>2</sup>**The earth was without form, and void; and darkness *was* on the face of the deep.** And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters.<sup>1</sup>

**Isaiah 14:3-17 -**

<sup>3</sup>It shall come to pass in the day the LORD gives you rest from your sorrow, and from your fear and the hard bondage in which you were made to serve, <sup>4</sup>that you will take up this proverb against the king of Babylon, and say:

“How the oppressor has ceased,  
The golden city ceased!  
5 The LORD has broken the staff of the wicked,  
The scepter of the rulers;  
6 He who struck the people in wrath with a continual stroke,  
He who ruled the nations in anger,  
Is persecuted *and* no one hinders.  
7 The whole earth is at rest *and* quiet;  
They break forth into singing.  
8 Indeed the cypress trees rejoice over you,  
*And* the cedars of Lebanon,  
*Saying*, ‘Since you were cut down,  
No woodsman has come up against us.’  
9 “Hell from beneath is excited about you,  
To meet *you* at your coming;  
It stirs up the dead for you,  
All the chief ones of the earth;  
It has raised up from their thrones  
All the kings of the nations.  
10 They all shall speak and say to you:  
‘Have you also become as weak as we?  
Have you become like us?’  
11 Your pomp is brought down to Sheol,  
*And* the sound of your stringed instruments;  
The maggot is spread under you,  
*And* worms cover you.’  
12 “**How you are fallen from heaven,  
O Lucifer, son of the morning!  
How you are cut down to the ground,  
You who weakened the nations!**  
13 **For you have said in your heart:**

---

<sup>1</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

**'I will ascend into heaven,  
 I will exalt my throne above the stars of God;  
 I will also sit on the mount of the congregation  
 On the farthest sides of the north;**  
 14 **I will ascend above the heights of the clouds,  
 I will be like the Most High.'**  
 15 **Yet you shall be brought down to Sheol,  
 To the lowest depths of the Pit.**  
 16 "Those who see you will gaze at you,  
*And consider you, saying:*  
*'Is this the man who made the earth tremble,  
 Who shook kingdoms,*  
 17 *Who made the world as a wilderness  
 And destroyed its cities,*

*Who did not open the house of his prisoners?'*<sup>2</sup>

**Ezekiel 28:11-19 -**

<sup>11</sup>Moreover the word of the LORD came to me, saying, <sup>12</sup>"Son of man, take up a lamentation for the king of Tyre, and say to him, 'Thus says the Lord GOD:

**"You were the seal of perfection,  
 Full of wisdom and perfect in beauty.**  
 13 **You were in Eden, the garden of God;**  
 Every precious stone *was* your covering:  
 The sardius, topaz, and diamond,  
 Beryl, onyx, and jasper,  
 Sapphire, turquoise, and emerald with gold.  
 The workmanship of your timbrels and pipes  
 Was prepared for you on the day you were created.  
 14 **"You were the anointed cherub who covers;  
 I established you;  
 You were on the holy mountain of God;  
 You walked back and forth in the midst of fiery stones.**  
 15 **You were perfect in your ways from the day you were created,  
 Till iniquity was found in you.**  
 16 **"By the abundance of your trading  
 You became filled with violence within,  
 And you sinned;  
 Therefore I cast you as a profane thing  
 Out of the mountain of God;  
 And I destroyed you, O covering cherub,**

---

<sup>2</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.*

- From the midst of the fiery stones.  
 17 “Your heart was lifted up because of your beauty;  
 You corrupted your wisdom for the sake of your splendor;  
 I cast you to the ground,  
 I laid you before kings,  
 That they might gaze at you.  
 18 **“You defiled your sanctuaries  
 By the multitude of your iniquities,  
 By the iniquity of your trading;  
 Therefore I brought fire from your midst;  
 It devoured you,  
 And I turned you to ashes upon the earth  
 In the sight of all who saw you.**  
 19 All who knew you among the peoples are astonished at you;  
 You have become a horror,

And *shall be* no more forever.” ’ ’<sup>3</sup>

#### **Luke 10:18 -**

<sup>18</sup>And He said to them, **“I saw Satan fall like lightning from heaven.”**<sup>4</sup>

#### **Luke 20:27-40 -**

<sup>27</sup>Then some of the Sadducees, who deny that there is a resurrection, came to *Him* and asked Him, <sup>28</sup>saying: “Teacher, Moses wrote to us *that* if a man’s brother dies, having a wife, and he dies without children, his brother should take his wife and raise up offspring for his brother. <sup>29</sup>“Now there were seven brothers. And the first took a wife, and died without children. <sup>30</sup>“And the second took her as wife, and he died childless. <sup>31</sup>“Then the third took her, and in like manner the seven also; and they left no children, and died. <sup>32</sup>“Last of all the woman died also. <sup>33</sup>“Therefore, in the resurrection, whose wife does she become? For all seven had her as wife.” <sup>34</sup>And Jesus answered and said to them, **“The sons of this age marry and are given in marriage. <sup>35</sup>“But those who are counted worthy to attain that age, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry nor are given in marriage; <sup>36</sup>“nor can they die anymore, for they are equal to the angels and are sons of God, being sons of the resurrection. <sup>37</sup>“But even Moses showed in the *burning bush passage* that the dead are raised, when he called the Lord ‘the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.’ <sup>38</sup>“For He is not the God of the dead but of the living, for all live to Him.” <sup>39</sup>Then some of the scribes answered and said, “Teacher, You have spoken well.” <sup>40</sup>But after that they dared not question Him anymore.<sup>5</sup>**

<sup>3</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>4</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>5</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

**John 12:31 -**

<sup>31</sup>“Now is the judgment of this world; **now the ruler of this world will be cast out.**”<sup>6</sup>

**John 14:6 -**

<sup>6</sup>Jesus said to him, “**I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me.**”<sup>7</sup>

**Acts 4:8-12 -**

<sup>8</sup>Then Peter, filled with the Holy Spirit, said to them, “Rulers of the people and elders of Israel: <sup>9</sup>“If we this day are judged for a good deed *done* to a helpless man, by what means he has been made well, <sup>10</sup>“let it be known to you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom you crucified, whom God raised from the dead, by Him this man stands here before you whole. <sup>11</sup>“**This is the ‘stone which was rejected by you builders, which has become the chief cornerstone.’** <sup>12</sup>“**Nor is there salvation in any other, for there is no other name under heaven given among men by which we must be saved.**”<sup>8</sup>

**Revelation 12:3-4 and Vv. 7-9 -**

<sup>3</sup>And another sign appeared in heaven: behold, a great, fiery red dragon having seven heads and ten horns, and seven diadems on his heads. <sup>4</sup>**His tail drew a third of the stars of heaven and threw them to the earth.** And the dragon stood before the woman who was ready to give birth, to devour her Child as soon as it was born.<sup>9</sup>

<sup>7</sup>And war broke out in heaven: Michael and his angels fought with the dragon; and the dragon and his angels fought, <sup>8</sup>but they did not prevail, nor was a place found for them in heaven any longer. <sup>9</sup>**So the great dragon was cast out, that serpent of old, called the Devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was cast to the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.**<sup>10</sup>

**Revelation 20:10 -**

---

<sup>6</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>7</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>8</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>9</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>10</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>10</sup>**The devil, who deceived them, was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone** where the beast and the false prophet *are*. And they will be tormented day and night forever and ever.<sup>11</sup>

*Thus, God created humans in order to have a group of mortal beings from which He could 'harvest' replacements for His family and grant them immortality in His presence. These would become known as the 'children of God'. God would also create some humans whose lives would be led by Satan. These 'children of the devil' would also be 'harvested', but they would be thrown into the lake of fire to permanently die. Unfortunately humans, (especially the children of God) would have to endure significant suffering in the earth as mortal beings BEFORE they would be granted immortality. It is through suffering that God would decide who would enter His kingdom. Again, much of the burden of suffering through trials and tribulation would be born by those who were created to enter the kingdom of God. This life would be a 'wilderness experience' in preparation for eternity. In the 'wilderness' we learn to totally rely on and have faith in God through Jesus Christ. Those created to be 'wicked' would have their pleasures as a reward in this life. The suffering on earth at the hands of the 'children of the devil' would encourage the 'children of God' to be obedient to God and draw near to Him so that they would not need to suffer the second death in the lake of fire. Again, in this new plan of God, any human wanting to become immortal would ultimately need to accept the Son of God, Jesus Christ as their Lord and Savior. **Jesus is the only name under heaven through which people can be saved and receive a 'ticket' into the kingdom of God to live forever in His presence.** All others would end up in hell then ultimately the lake of fire, including those like the Pharisees who did not believe in Jesus. Believing that Jesus is the Son of God made manifest in the flesh and accepting Him as Lord and Savior is the ultimate righteous, (obedient) act that will get us into the kingdom of God.*

**It is further important for us to learn what it feels like to be 'hated without a cause' in order to know how God felt when Lucifer rebelled against Him.** In this way we will be unlikely to perpetrate the same offense against anyone else, especially God. Then if God grants us immortality, we will be likely to forever stay in the position He chooses to give us for eternity. For people who receive Jesus as their Lord and Savior and continue to persevere in obedience to God with the help of the Holy Spirit, if they die they will rest in Paradise, (a.k.a., 'Abraham's bosom') until Jesus comes back. They will then be raised to immortality in the FIRST RESURRECTION. The obedient Christians who are still alive when Jesus comes back will be instantaneously changed into their immortal bodies. Those who rebel and refuse to receive this plan of God for immortality through Jesus, when they die will be tormented in hell until the SECOND RESURRECTION when they will be judged on JUDGMENT DAY. These rebellious people will be judged under the old law of sin and death. If they are found wanting, then they will be thrown into the lake of fire, which is the second and permanent death. They will NOT suffer forever as the devil and his demons will since the demonic spirits are already immortal. Rebellious humans will be destroyed forever. This is the mercy of God for them. Those involved in

---

<sup>11</sup>The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

*the first resurrection will live forever in the presence of God in the New Jerusalem. It may be possible that a few souls from hell will be redeemed at the second resurrection (of the unjust), but we should not take that chance, (see Acts 4:10-12 above, Deuteronomy chapter 8, Proverbs 16:4, Matthew 3:1-12, 5:10-20, 10:28, 13:24-43, Luke 10:1-3, 16:19-31, John 3:1-21, chapter 15, 16:33, Romans chapter 8, 9:6-33, I Corinthians 15:35-58, I Thessalonians 4:13-18, Hebrews 2:10-18, 5:5-11, I Peter 3:18-22, I John chapter 3, Revelation 1:18, 14:14-20 and 20:1-21:8; the Apocrypha of the Old Testament - II Esdras 6:55-7:115).*

## Deuteronomy Chapter 8 -

### Chapter 8

<sup>1</sup>“Every commandment which I command you today you must be careful to observe, that you may live and multiply, and go in and possess the land of which the LORD swore to your fathers. <sup>2</sup>“**And you shall remember that the LORD your God led you all the way these forty years in the wilderness, to humble you *and* test you, to know what *was* in your heart, whether you would keep His commandments or not.** <sup>3</sup>“**So He humbled you, allowed you to hunger, and fed you with manna which you did not know nor did your fathers know, that He might make you know that man shall not live by bread alone; but man lives by every *word* that proceeds from the mouth of the LORD.** <sup>4</sup>“Your garments did not wear out on you, nor did your foot swell these forty years. <sup>5</sup>“You should know in your heart that as a man chastens his son, *so* the LORD your God chastens you. <sup>6</sup>“Therefore you shall keep the commandments of the LORD your God, to walk in His ways and to fear Him. <sup>7</sup>“For the LORD your God is bringing you into a good land, a land of brooks of water, of fountains and springs, that flow out of valleys and hills; <sup>8</sup>“a land of wheat and barley, of vines and fig trees and pomegranates, a land of olive oil and honey; <sup>9</sup>“a land in which you will eat bread without scarcity, in which you will lack nothing; a land whose stones *are* iron and out of whose hills you can dig copper. <sup>10</sup>“When you have eaten and are full, then you shall bless the LORD your God for the good land which He has given you.

<sup>11</sup>“**Beware that you do not forget the LORD your God by not keeping His commandments, His judgments, and His statutes which I command you today,** <sup>12</sup>“**lest—*when* you have eaten and are full, and have built beautiful houses and dwell *in them*;** <sup>13</sup>“**and *when* your herds and your flocks multiply, and your silver and your gold are multiplied, and all that you have is multiplied;** <sup>14</sup>“**when your heart is lifted up, and you forget the LORD your God who brought you out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage;** <sup>15</sup>“**who led you through that great and terrible wilderness, *in which were* fiery serpents and scorpions and thirsty land where there was no water; who brought water for you out of the flinty rock;** <sup>16</sup>“**who fed you in the wilderness with manna, which your fathers did not know, that He might humble you and that He might test you, to do you good in the end—** <sup>17</sup>“**then you say in your heart, ‘My power and the might of my hand have gained me this wealth.’** <sup>18</sup>“**And you shall remember the LORD your God, for *it is* He who gives you power to get wealth, that He may establish His covenant which He swore to your fathers, as *it is* this day.** <sup>19</sup>“**Then it shall be, if you by any means forget the LORD your God, and follow other gods, and serve them and worship them, I testify against you this day**

**that you shall surely perish.** <sup>20</sup>“As the nations which the LORD destroys before you, so you shall perish, because you would not be obedient to the voice of the LORD your God.<sup>12</sup>

#### **Proverbs 16:4 -**

<sup>4</sup> The LORD has made all for Himself,  
Yes, **even the wicked for the day of doom.**<sup>13</sup>

#### **Matthew 3:1-12 -**

<sup>1</sup>In those days John the Baptist came preaching in the wilderness of Judea, <sup>2</sup>and saying, “Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand!” <sup>3</sup>For this is he who was spoken of by the prophet Isaiah, saying:

“The voice of one crying in the wilderness:  
‘Prepare the way of the LORD;  
Make His paths straight.’ ”

<sup>4</sup>And John himself was clothed in camel’s hair, with a leather belt around his waist; and his food was locusts and wild honey. <sup>5</sup>Then Jerusalem, all Judea, and all the region around the Jordan went out to him <sup>6</sup>and were baptized by him in the Jordan, confessing their sins. <sup>7</sup>But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming to his baptism, he said to them, “Brood of vipers! Who warned you to flee from the wrath to come? <sup>8</sup>“**Therefore bear fruits worthy of repentance,** <sup>9</sup>“**and do not think to say to yourselves, ‘We have Abraham as *our* father.’ For I say to you that God is able to raise up children to Abraham from these stones.** <sup>10</sup>“**And even now the ax is laid to the root of the trees. Therefore every tree which does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire.** <sup>11</sup>“**I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance, but He who is coming after me is mightier than I, whose sandals I am not worthy to carry. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and fire.** <sup>12</sup>“**His winnowing fan *is* in His hand, and He will thoroughly clean out His threshing floor, and gather His wheat into the barn; but He will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.”<sup>14</sup>**

#### **Matthew 5:10-20 -**

<sup>10</sup> **Blessed are those who are persecuted for righteousness’ sake,  
For theirs is the kingdom of heaven.**

---

<sup>12</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>13</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>14</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.



<sup>11</sup>“**Blessed are you when they revile and persecute you, and say all kinds of evil against you falsely for My sake.** <sup>12</sup>“**Rejoice and be exceedingly glad, for great is your reward in heaven, for so they persecuted the prophets who were before you.**

<sup>13</sup>“You are the salt of the earth; but if the salt loses its flavor, how shall it be seasoned? It is then good for nothing but to be thrown out and trampled underfoot by men. <sup>14</sup>“You are the light of the world. A city that is set on a hill cannot be hidden. <sup>15</sup>“Nor do they light a lamp and put it under a basket, but on a lampstand, and it gives light to all *who are* in the house. <sup>16</sup>“Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works and glorify your Father in heaven.

<sup>17</sup>“Do not think that I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I did not come to destroy but to fulfill. <sup>18</sup>“For assuredly, I say to you, till heaven and earth pass away, one jot or one tittle will by no means pass from the law till all is fulfilled. <sup>19</sup>“Whoever therefore breaks one of the least of these commandments, and teaches men so, shall be called least in the kingdom of heaven; but whoever does and teaches *them*, he shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. <sup>20</sup>“**For I say to you, that unless your righteousness exceeds the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, you will by no means enter the kingdom of heaven.**<sup>15</sup>

#### **Matthew 10:28 -**

<sup>28</sup>“**And do not fear those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul. But rather fear Him who is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.** 16

#### **Matthew 13:24-43 -**

<sup>24</sup>Another parable He put forth to them, saying: “The kingdom of heaven is like a man who sowed good seed in his field; <sup>25</sup>“but while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat and went his way. <sup>26</sup>“But when the grain had sprouted and produced a crop, then the tares also appeared. <sup>27</sup>“So the servants of the owner came and said to him, ‘Sir, did you not sow good seed in your field? How then does it have tares?’ <sup>28</sup>“He said to them, ‘An enemy has done this.’ The servants said to him, ‘Do you want us then to go and gather them up?’ <sup>29</sup>“But he said, ‘No, lest while you gather up the tares you also uproot the wheat with them. <sup>30</sup>“**Let both grow together until the harvest, and at the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, “First gather together the tares and bind them in bundles to burn them, but gather the wheat into my barn.” ’ ’**

<sup>31</sup>Another parable He put forth to them, saying: “The kingdom of heaven is like a mustard seed, which a man took and sowed in his field, <sup>32</sup>“which indeed is the least of all the seeds; but when it is grown it is greater than the herbs and becomes a tree, so that the birds of the air come and nest in its branches.”

<sup>33</sup>Another parable He spoke to them: “The kingdom of heaven is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal till it was all leavened.”

---

15*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

16*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>34</sup>All these things Jesus spoke to the multitude in parables; and without a parable He did not speak to them, <sup>35</sup>that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying:

“I will open My mouth in parables;  
I will utter things kept secret from the foundation of the world.”

<sup>36</sup>Then Jesus sent the multitude away and went into the house. And His disciples came to Him, saying, “Explain to us the parable of the tares of the field.” <sup>37</sup>He answered and said to them: **“He who sows the good seed is the Son of Man. <sup>38</sup>“The field is the world, the good seeds are the sons of the kingdom, but the tares are the sons of the wicked one. <sup>39</sup>“The enemy who sowed them is the devil, the harvest is the end of the age, and the reapers are the angels. <sup>40</sup>“Therefore as the tares are gathered and burned in the fire, so it will be at the end of this age. <sup>41</sup>“The Son of Man will send out His angels, and they will gather out of His kingdom all things that offend, and those who practice lawlessness, <sup>42</sup>“and will cast them into the furnace of fire. There will be wailing and gnashing of teeth. <sup>43</sup>“Then the righteous will shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. He who has ears to hear, let him hear!”<sup>17</sup>**

#### Luke 10:1-3 -

<sup>1</sup>After these things the Lord appointed seventy others also, and sent them two by two before His face into every city and place where He Himself was about to go. <sup>2</sup>Then He said to them, **“The harvest truly is great, but the laborers are few; therefore pray the Lord of the harvest to send out laborers into His harvest. <sup>3</sup>“Go your way; behold, I send you out as lambs among wolves.”<sup>18</sup>**

#### Luke 16:19-31 -

<sup>19</sup>“There was a certain rich man who was clothed in purple and fine linen and fared sumptuously every day. <sup>20</sup>“But there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, full of sores, who was laid at his gate, <sup>21</sup>“desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man’s table. Moreover the dogs came and licked his sores. <sup>22</sup>“So it was that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels to Abraham’s bosom. The rich man also died and was buried. <sup>23</sup>“And being in torments in Hades, he lifted up his eyes and saw Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. <sup>24</sup>“Then he cried and said, ‘Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame.’ <sup>25</sup>“But Abraham said, ‘Son, remember that in your lifetime you received your good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things; but now he is comforted and you are tormented. <sup>26</sup>“And besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed, so that those who want to pass from here to you cannot, nor can those from there pass to us.’ <sup>27</sup>“Then he said, ‘I beg you therefore, father, that you would send him to my father’s house, <sup>28</sup>‘for

---

<sup>17</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>18</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

I have five brothers, that he may testify to them, lest they also come to this place of torment.’<sup>29</sup>“Abraham said to him, ‘They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them.’<sup>30</sup>“And he said, ‘No, father Abraham; but if one goes to them from the dead, they will repent.’<sup>31</sup>“But he said to him, ‘If they do not hear Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded though one rise from the dead.’”<sup>19</sup>

### John 3:1-21 -

<sup>1</sup>There was a man of the Pharisees named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews. <sup>2</sup>This man came to Jesus by night and said to Him, “Rabbi, we know that You are a teacher come from God; for no one can do these signs that You do unless God is with him.” <sup>3</sup>Jesus answered and said to him, **“Most assuredly, I say to you, unless one is born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.”** <sup>4</sup>Nicodemus said to Him, “How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter a second time into his mother’s womb and be born?” <sup>5</sup>Jesus answered, **“Most assuredly, I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of God. <sup>6</sup>“That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. <sup>7</sup>“Do not marvel that I said to you, ‘You must be born again.’ <sup>8</sup>“The wind blows where it wishes, and you hear the sound of it, but cannot tell where it comes from and where it goes. So is everyone who is born of the Spirit.”** <sup>9</sup>Nicodemus answered and said to Him, “How can these things be?” <sup>10</sup>Jesus answered and said to him, “Are you the teacher of Israel, and do not know these things? <sup>11</sup>“Most assuredly, I say to you, We speak what We know and testify what We have seen, and you do not receive Our witness. <sup>12</sup>“If I have told you earthly things and you do not believe, how will you believe if I tell you heavenly things? <sup>13</sup>“No one has ascended to heaven but He who came down from heaven, *that is*, the Son of Man who is in heaven. <sup>14</sup>“And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of Man be lifted up, <sup>15</sup>“that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have eternal life. <sup>16</sup>“**For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life. <sup>17</sup>“For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world through Him might be saved. <sup>18</sup>“He who believes in Him is not condemned; but he who does not believe is condemned already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. <sup>19</sup>“And this is the condemnation, that the light has come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. <sup>20</sup>“For everyone practicing evil hates the light and does not come to the light, lest his deeds should be exposed. <sup>21</sup>“But he who does the truth comes to the light, that his deeds may be clearly seen, that they have been done in God.”**<sup>20</sup>

### John Chapter 15 -

#### Chapter 15

---

<sup>19</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>20</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>1</sup>“I am the true vine, and My Father is the vinedresser. <sup>2</sup>“Every branch in Me that does not bear fruit He takes away; and every *branch* that bears fruit He prunes, that it may bear more fruit. <sup>3</sup>“You are already clean because of the word which I have spoken to you. <sup>4</sup>“Abide in Me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, unless it abides in the vine, neither can you, unless you abide in Me. <sup>5</sup>“**I am the vine, you *are* the branches. He who abides in Me, and I in him, bears much fruit; for without Me you can do nothing.** <sup>6</sup>“**If anyone does not abide in Me, he is cast out as a branch and is withered; and they gather them and throw *them* into the fire, and they are burned.** <sup>7</sup>“**If you abide in Me, and My words abide in you, you will ask what you desire, and it shall be done for you.** <sup>8</sup>“**By this My Father is glorified, that you bear much fruit; so you will be My disciples.**

<sup>9</sup>“As the Father loved Me, I also have loved you; abide in My love. <sup>10</sup>“If you keep My commandments, you will abide in My love, just as I have kept My Father’s commandments and abide in His love. <sup>11</sup>“These things I have spoken to you, that My joy may remain in you, and *that* your joy may be full. <sup>12</sup>“This is My commandment, that you love one another as I have loved you. <sup>13</sup>“**Greater love has no one than this, than to lay down one’s life for his friends.** <sup>14</sup>“**You are My friends if you do whatever I command you.** <sup>15</sup>“No longer do I call you servants, for a servant does not know what his master is doing; but I have called you friends, for all things that I heard from My Father I have made known to you. <sup>16</sup>“You did not choose Me, but I chose you and appointed you that you should go and bear fruit, and *that* your fruit should remain, that whatever you ask the Father in My name He may give you. <sup>17</sup>“These things I command you, that you love one another.

<sup>18</sup>“**If the world hates you, you know that it hated Me before *it hated* you.** <sup>19</sup>“**If you were of the world, the world would love its own. Yet because you are not of the world, but I chose you out of the world, therefore the world hates you.** <sup>20</sup>“**Remember the word that I said to you, ‘A servant is not greater than his master.’ If they persecuted Me, they will also persecute you. If they kept My word, they will keep yours also.** <sup>21</sup>“**But all these things they will do to you for My name’s sake, because they do not know Him who sent Me.** <sup>22</sup>“**If I had not come and spoken to them, they would have no sin, but now they have no excuse for their sin.** <sup>23</sup>“**He who hates Me hates My Father also.** <sup>24</sup>“**If I had not done among them the works which no one else did, they would have no sin; but now they have seen and also hated both Me and My Father.** <sup>25</sup>“**But *this happened* that the word might be fulfilled which is written in their law, ‘They hated Me without a cause.’**

<sup>26</sup>“But when the Helper comes, whom I shall send to you from the Father, the Spirit of truth who proceeds from the Father, He will testify of Me. <sup>27</sup>“And you also will bear witness, because you have been with Me from the beginning.<sup>21</sup>

### John 16:33 -

<sup>33</sup>“These things I have spoken to you, that in Me you may have peace. **In the world you will have tribulation; but be of good cheer, I have overcome the world.”<sup>22</sup>**

---

<sup>21</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

**Romans Chapter 8 -***Life in the Spirit*

**8** So now there is no condemnation for those who belong to Christ Jesus. <sup>2</sup> For the power of the life-giving Spirit has freed you through Christ Jesus from the power of sin that leads to death. <sup>3</sup> The law of Moses could not save us, because of our sinful nature. But God put into effect a different plan to save us. He sent his own Son in a human body like ours, except that ours are sinful. God destroyed sin's control over us by giving his Son as a sacrifice for our sins. <sup>4</sup> He did this so that the requirement of the law would be fully accomplished for us who no longer follow our sinful nature but instead follow the Spirit.

<sup>5</sup> Those who are dominated by the sinful nature think about sinful things, but those who are controlled by the Holy Spirit think about things that please the Spirit. <sup>6</sup> If your sinful nature controls your mind, there is death. But if the Holy Spirit controls your mind, there is life and peace. <sup>7</sup> For the sinful nature is always hostile to God. It never did obey God's laws, and it never will. <sup>8</sup> That's why those who are still under the control of their sinful nature can never please God.

<sup>9</sup> But you are not controlled by your sinful nature. You are controlled by the Spirit if you have the Spirit of God living in you. (And remember that those who do not have the Spirit of Christ living in them are not Christians at all.) <sup>10</sup> Since Christ lives within you, even though your body will die because of sin, your spirit is alive because you have been made right with God. <sup>11</sup> The Spirit of God, who raised Jesus from the dead, lives in you. And just as he raised Christ from the dead, he will give life to your mortal body by this same Spirit living within you.

<sup>12</sup> So, dear brothers and sisters, you have no obligation whatsoever to do what your sinful nature urges you to do. <sup>13</sup> For if you keep on following it, you will perish. But if through the power of the Holy Spirit you turn from it and its evil deeds, you will live. <sup>14</sup> For all who are led by the Spirit of God are children of God.

<sup>15</sup> So you should not be like cowering, fearful slaves. You should behave instead like God's very own children, adopted into his family—calling him "Father, dear Father." <sup>16</sup> For his Holy Spirit speaks to us deep in our hearts and tells us that we are God's children. <sup>17</sup> And since we are his children, we will share his treasures—for everything God gives to his Son, Christ, is ours, too. But if we are to share his glory, we must also share his suffering.

*The Future Glory*

<sup>18</sup> Yet what we suffer now is nothing compared to the glory he will give us later. <sup>19</sup> For all creation is waiting eagerly for that future day when God will reveal who his children really are. <sup>20</sup> Against its will, everything on earth was subjected to God's curse. <sup>21</sup> All creation anticipates the day when it will join God's children in glorious freedom from death and decay. <sup>22</sup> For we know that all creation has been groaning as in the pains of childbirth right up to the present time. <sup>23</sup> And even we Christians,

although we have the Holy Spirit within us as a foretaste of future glory, also groan to be released from pain and suffering. We, too, wait anxiously for that day when God will give us our full rights as his children, including the new bodies he has promised us.<sup>24</sup> Now that we are saved, we eagerly look forward to this freedom. For if you already have something, you don't need to hope for it.<sup>25</sup> But if we look forward to something we don't have yet, we must wait patiently and confidently.

<sup>26</sup> **And the Holy Spirit helps us in our distress.** For we don't even know what we should pray for, nor how we should pray. But the Holy Spirit prays for us with groanings that cannot be expressed in words.<sup>27</sup> And the Father who knows all hearts knows what the Spirit is saying, for the Spirit pleads for us believers in harmony with God's own will.

<sup>28</sup> **And we know that God causes everything to work together for the good of those who love God and are called according to his purpose for them. For God knew his people in advance, and he chose them to become like his Son, so that his Son would be the firstborn, with many brothers and sisters.**<sup>30</sup> **And having chosen them, he called them to come to him. And he gave them right standing with himself, and he promised them his glory.**

#### *Nothing Can Separate Us from God's Love*

<sup>31</sup> What can we say about such wonderful things as these? If God is for us, who can ever be against us? <sup>32</sup> Since God did not spare even his own Son but gave him up for us all, won't God, who gave us Christ, also give us everything else?

<sup>33</sup> Who dares accuse us whom God has chosen for his own? Will God? No! He is the one who has given us right standing with himself.<sup>34</sup> Who then will condemn us? Will Christ Jesus? No, for he is the one who died for us and was raised to life for us and is sitting at the place of highest honor next to God, pleading for us.

<sup>35</sup> **Can anything ever separate us from Christ's love? Does it mean he no longer loves us if we have trouble or calamity, or are persecuted, or are hungry or cold or in danger or threatened with death?**<sup>36</sup> (Even the Scriptures say, "For your sake we are killed every day; we are being slaughtered like sheep.")<sup>37</sup> **No, despite all these things, overwhelming victory is ours through Christ, who loved us.**

<sup>38</sup> **And I am convinced that nothing can ever separate us from his love. Death can't, and life can't. The angels can't, and the demons can't. Our fears for today, our worries about tomorrow, and even the powers of hell can't keep God's love away.**<sup>39</sup> **Whether we are high above the sky or in the deepest ocean, nothing in all creation will ever be able to separate us from the love of God that is revealed in Christ Jesus our Lord.**<sup>23</sup>

#### **Romans 9:6-33 -**

<sup>6</sup>But it is not that the word of God has taken no effect. For they *are* not all Israel who *are* of Israel,<sup>7</sup> nor *are they* all children because they are the seed of Abraham; but, "In Isaac your seed shall be called."<sup>8</sup> That is, those who *are* the children of the flesh, these *are* not the children of God; but the children of the promise are counted as the seed.<sup>9</sup> For

---

<sup>23</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

this *is* the word of promise: “At this time I will come and Sarah shall have a son.”<sup>10</sup> And not only *this*, but when Rebecca also had conceived by one man, *even* by our father Isaac<sup>11</sup> (for *the children* not yet being born, nor having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works but of Him who calls),<sup>12</sup> it was said to her, “The older shall serve the younger.”<sup>13</sup> As it is written, “Jacob I have loved, but Esau I have hated.”

<sup>14</sup>**What shall we say then? *Is there unrighteousness with God? Certainly not!***  
<sup>15</sup>**For He says to Moses, “I will have mercy on whomever I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whomever I will have compassion.”**<sup>16</sup>**So then *it is not* of him who wills, nor of him who runs, but of God who shows mercy.**<sup>17</sup>**For the Scripture says to Pharaoh, “For this very purpose I have raised you up, that I may show My power in you, and that My name may be declared in all the earth.”**  
<sup>18</sup>**Therefore He has mercy on whom He wills, and whom He wills He hardens.**<sup>19</sup>**You will say to me then, “Why does He still find fault? For who has resisted His will?”**  
<sup>20</sup>**But indeed, O man, who are you to reply against God? Will the thing formed say to him who formed *it*, “Why have you made me like this?”**<sup>21</sup>**Does not the potter have power over the clay, from the same lump to make one vessel for honor and another for dishonor?**<sup>22</sup>**What if God, wanting to show *His* wrath and to make His power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath prepared for destruction,**<sup>23</sup> **and that He might make known the riches of His glory on the vessels of mercy, which He had prepared beforehand for glory,**<sup>24</sup> ***even* us whom He called, not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles?**<sup>25</sup>**As He says also in Hosea:**

“I will call them My people, who were not My people,  
 And her beloved, who was not beloved.”

<sup>26</sup> “And it shall come to pass in the place where it was said to them,  
 ‘You *are* not My people,’  
 There they shall be called sons of the living God.”

<sup>27</sup>Isaiah also cries out concerning Israel:

“Though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea,  
 The remnant will be saved.

<sup>28</sup> For He will finish the work and cut *it* short in righteousness,  
 Because the LORD will make a short work upon the earth.”

<sup>29</sup>And as Isaiah said before:

“Unless the LORD of Sabaoth had left us a seed,  
 We would have become like Sodom,  
 And we would have been made like Gomorrah.”

<sup>30</sup>What shall we say then? That Gentiles, who did not pursue righteousness, have attained to righteousness, even the righteousness of faith;<sup>31</sup> but Israel, pursuing the law of righteousness, has not attained to the law of righteousness.<sup>32</sup> Why? Because *they did* not *seek it* by faith, but as it were, by the works of the law. For they stumbled at that stumbling stone.<sup>33</sup> As it is written:

“Behold, I lay in Zion a stumbling stone and rock of offense,

And whoever believes on Him will not be put to shame.”<sup>24</sup>

### I Corinthians 15:35-58 -

<sup>35</sup>But someone will say, “How are the dead raised up? And with what body do they come?” <sup>36</sup>Foolish one, what you sow is not made alive unless it dies. <sup>37</sup>And what you sow, you do not sow that body that shall be, but mere grain—perhaps wheat or some other *grain*. <sup>38</sup>But God gives it a body as He pleases, and to each seed its own body. <sup>39</sup>All flesh *is* not the same flesh, but *there is one kind of* flesh of men, another flesh of animals, another of fish, *and* another of birds. <sup>40</sup>*There are* also celestial bodies and terrestrial bodies; but the glory of the celestial *is* one, and the *glory* of the terrestrial *is* another. <sup>41</sup>*There is* one glory of the sun, another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars; for *one* star differs from *another* star in glory. <sup>42</sup>So also *is* the resurrection of the dead. *The body* is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption. <sup>43</sup>It is sown in dishonor, it is raised in glory. It is sown in weakness, it is raised in power. <sup>44</sup>It is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body. <sup>45</sup>And so it is written, “The first man Adam became a living being.” The last Adam *became* a life-giving spirit. <sup>46</sup>However, the spiritual is not first, but the natural, and afterward the spiritual. <sup>47</sup>The first man *was* of the earth, *made* of dust; the second Man *is* the Lord from heaven. <sup>48</sup>As *was* the *man* of dust, so also *are* those *who are made* of dust; and as *is* the heavenly *Man*, so also *are* those *who are* heavenly. <sup>49</sup>And as we have borne the image of the *man* of dust, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly *Man*.

<sup>50</sup>Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; nor does corruption inherit incorruption. <sup>51</sup>**Behold, I tell you a mystery: We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed—** <sup>52</sup>**in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, and the dead will be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.** <sup>53</sup>**For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality.** <sup>54</sup>**So when this corruptible has put on incorruption, and this mortal has put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written: “Death is swallowed up in victory.”**

<sup>55</sup> **“O Death, where *is* your sting?  
O Hades, where *is* your victory?”**

<sup>56</sup>**The sting of death *is* sin, and the strength of sin *is* the law.** <sup>57</sup>**But thanks *be* to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.** <sup>58</sup>Therefore, my beloved brethren, be steadfast, immovable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, knowing that your labor is not in vain in the Lord.<sup>25</sup>

### I Thessalonians 4:13-18 -

*The Hope of the Resurrection*

---

<sup>24</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>25</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.



<sup>13</sup> And now, brothers and sisters, I want you to know what will happen to the Christians who have died so you will not be full of sorrow like people who have no hope. <sup>14</sup> For since we believe that Jesus died and was raised to life again, we also believe that when Jesus comes, God will bring back with Jesus all the Christians who have died.

<sup>15</sup> I can tell you this directly from the Lord: **We who are still living when the Lord returns will not rise to meet him ahead of those who are in their graves.** <sup>16</sup> **For the Lord himself will come down from heaven with a commanding shout, with the call of the archangel, and with the trumpet call of God. First, all the Christians who have died will rise from their graves.** <sup>17</sup> **Then, together with them, we who are still alive and remain on the earth will be caught up in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air and remain with him forever.** <sup>18</sup> So comfort and encourage each other with these words.<sup>26</sup>

### Hebrews 2:10-18 -

<sup>10</sup>For it was fitting for Him, for whom *are* all things and by whom *are* all things, in bringing many sons to glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings. <sup>11</sup>For both He who sanctifies and those who are being sanctified *are* all of one, for which reason He is not ashamed to call them brethren, <sup>12</sup>saying:

**“I will declare Your name to My brethren;  
In the midst of the assembly I will sing praise to You.”**

<sup>13</sup>And again:

“I will put My trust in Him.”

And again:

“Here am I and the children whom God has given Me.”

<sup>14</sup>Inasmuch then as the children have partaken of flesh and blood, He Himself likewise shared in the same, that through death He might destroy him who had the power of death, that is, the devil, <sup>15</sup>and release those who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage. <sup>16</sup>For indeed He does not give aid to angels, but He does give aid to the seed of Abraham. <sup>17</sup>Therefore, in all things He had to be made like *His* brethren, that He might be a merciful and faithful High Priest in things *pertaining* to God, to make propitiation for the sins of the people. <sup>18</sup>For in that He Himself has suffered, being tempted, He is able to aid those who are tempted.<sup>27</sup>

### Hebrews 5:5-11 -

<sup>5</sup>So also Christ did not glorify Himself to become High Priest, *but it* was He who said to Him:

“You are My Son,

---

<sup>26</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>27</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

Today I have begotten You.”

<sup>6</sup>As *He* also *says* in another *place*:

“You *are* a priest forever

According to the order of Melchizedek”;

<sup>7</sup>who, in the days of His flesh, when He had offered up prayers and supplications, with vehement cries and tears **to Him who was able to save Him from death, and was heard because of His godly fear,** <sup>8</sup>**though He was a Son, yet He learned obedience by the things which He suffered.** <sup>9</sup>**And having been perfected, He became the author of eternal salvation to all who obey Him,** <sup>10</sup>called by God as High Priest “according to the order of Melchizedek,” <sup>11</sup>of whom we have much to say, and hard to explain, since you have become dull of hearing.<sup>28</sup>

### I Peter 3:18-22 -

<sup>18</sup>For Christ also suffered once for sins, the just for the unjust, that He might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh but made alive by the Spirit, <sup>19</sup>**by whom also He went and preached to the spirits in prison,** <sup>20</sup>who formerly were disobedient, when once the Divine longsuffering waited in the days of Noah, while *the* ark was being prepared, in which a few, that is, eight souls, were saved through water. <sup>21</sup>There is also an antitype which now saves us—baptism (not the removal of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God), through the resurrection of Jesus Christ, <sup>22</sup>who has gone into heaven and is at the right hand of God, angels and authorities and powers having been made subject to Him.<sup>29</sup>

### I John Chapter 3 -

#### Chapter 3

<sup>1</sup>**Behold what manner of love the Father has bestowed on us, that we should be called children of God! Therefore the world does not know us, because it did not know Him.** <sup>2</sup>**Beloved, now we are children of God; and it has not yet been revealed what we shall be, but we know that when He is revealed, we shall be like Him, for we shall see Him as He is.** <sup>3</sup>**And everyone who has this hope in Him purifies himself, just as He is pure.**

<sup>4</sup>Whoever commits sin also commits lawlessness, and sin is lawlessness. <sup>5</sup>And you know that He was manifested to take away our sins, and in Him there is no sin. <sup>6</sup>Whoever abides in Him does not sin. Whoever sins has neither seen Him nor known Him. <sup>7</sup>Little children, let no one deceive you. He who practices righteousness is righteous, just as He is righteous. <sup>8</sup>He who sins is of the devil, for the devil has sinned from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the

---

<sup>28</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>29</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

devil. <sup>9</sup>Whoever has been born of God does not sin, for His seed remains in him; and he cannot sin, because he has been born of God.

<sup>10</sup>**In this the children of God and the children of the devil are manifest: Whoever does not practice righteousness is not of God, nor is he who does not love his brother.** <sup>11</sup>For this is the message that you heard from the beginning, that we should love one another, <sup>12</sup>not as Cain *who* was of the wicked one and murdered his brother. And why did he murder him? Because his works were evil and his brother's righteous. <sup>13</sup>Do not marvel, my brethren, if the world hates you. <sup>14</sup>We know that we have passed from death to life, because we love the brethren. He who does not love *his* brother abides in death. <sup>15</sup>Whoever hates his brother is a murderer, and you know that no murderer has eternal life abiding in him.

<sup>16</sup>By this we know love, because He laid down His life for us. And we also ought to lay down *our* lives for the brethren. <sup>17</sup>But whoever has this world's goods, and sees his brother in need, and shuts up his heart from him, how does the love of God abide in him? <sup>18</sup>My little children, let us not love in word or in tongue, but in deed and in truth. <sup>19</sup>And by this we know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts before Him. <sup>20</sup>For if our heart condemns us, God is greater than our heart, and knows all things. <sup>21</sup>Beloved, if our heart does not condemn us, we have confidence toward God. <sup>22</sup>And whatever we ask we receive from Him, because we keep His commandments and do those things that are pleasing in His sight. <sup>23</sup>And this is His commandment: that we should believe on the name of His Son Jesus Christ and love one another, as He gave us commandment.

<sup>24</sup>Now he who keeps His commandments abides in Him, and He in him. And by this we know that He abides in us, by the Spirit whom He has given us.<sup>30</sup>

#### Revelation 1:18 -

<sup>18c</sup>**I am He who lives, and was dead, and behold, I am alive forevermore. Amen. And I have the keys of Hades and of Death.**<sup>31</sup>

#### Revelation 14:14-20 -

<sup>14</sup>Then I looked, and behold, a white cloud, and on the cloud sat *One* like the Son of Man, having on His head a golden crown, and in His hand a sharp sickle. <sup>15</sup>And another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to Him who sat on the cloud, **“Thrust in Your sickle and reap, for the time has come for You to reap, for the harvest of the earth is ripe.”** <sup>16</sup>So He who sat on the cloud thrust in His sickle on the earth, and the earth was reaped.

<sup>17</sup>Then another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven, he also having a sharp sickle. <sup>18</sup>And another angel came out from the altar, who had power over fire, and he cried with a loud cry to him who had the sharp sickle, saying, **“Thrust in your sharp**

---

<sup>30</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>31</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

sickle and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth, for her grapes are fully ripe.”<sup>19</sup>So the angel thrust his sickle into the earth and gathered the vine of the earth, and threw *it* into the great winepress of the wrath of God.<sup>20</sup>And the winepress was trampled outside the city, and blood came out of the winepress, up to the horses’ bridles, for one thousand six hundred furlongs.<sup>32</sup>

## Revelation 20:1-21:8 -

### Chapter 20

<sup>1</sup>Then I saw an angel coming down from heaven, having the key to the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. <sup>2</sup>He laid hold of the dragon, that serpent of old, who is *the* Devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years; <sup>3</sup>and he cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal on him, so that he should deceive the nations no more till the thousand years were finished. But after these things he must be released for a little while.

<sup>4</sup>And I saw thrones, and they sat on them, and judgment was committed to them. Then *I saw* the souls of those who had been beheaded for their witness to Jesus and for the word of God, who had not worshiped the beast or his image, and had not received *his* mark on their foreheads or on their hands. And they lived and reigned with Christ for a thousand years. <sup>5</sup>But the rest of the dead did not live again until the thousand years were finished. This *is* the first resurrection. **“Blessed and holy is he who has part in the first resurrection. Over such the second death has no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years.”**

<sup>7</sup>Now when the thousand years have expired, Satan will be released from his prison <sup>8</sup>and will go out to deceive the nations which are in the four corners of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle, whose number *is* as the sand of the sea. <sup>9</sup>They went up on the breadth of the earth and surrounded the camp of the saints and the beloved city. And fire came down from God out of heaven and devoured them. <sup>10</sup>**The devil, who deceived them, was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone where the beast and the false prophet *are*. And they will be tormented day and night forever and ever.**

<sup>11</sup>Then I saw a great white throne and Him who sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away. And there was found no place for them. <sup>12</sup>**And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before God, and books were opened. And another book was opened, which is *the Book of Life*. And the dead were judged according to their works, by the things which were written in the books.** <sup>13</sup>The sea gave up the dead who were in it, and Death and Hades delivered up the dead who were in them. And they were judged, each one according to his works. <sup>14</sup>Then Death and Hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. <sup>15</sup>And anyone not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire.

### Chapter 21

<sup>1</sup>Now I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away. Also there was no more sea. <sup>2</sup>Then I, John, saw the holy city, New

---

<sup>32</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. <sup>3</sup>And I heard a loud voice from heaven saying, “Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people. God Himself will be with them *and be their God*. <sup>4</sup>“And God will wipe away every tear from their eyes; there shall be no more death, nor sorrow, nor crying. There shall be no more pain, for the former things have passed away.” <sup>5</sup>Then He who sat on the throne said, “Behold, I make all things new.” And He said to me, “Write, for these words are true and faithful.” <sup>6</sup>And He said to me, “It is done! I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End. I will give of the fountain of the water of life freely to him who thirsts. <sup>7</sup>“**He who overcomes shall inherit all things, and I will be his God and he shall be My son.** <sup>8</sup>“**But the cowardly, unbelieving, abominable, murderers, sexually immoral, sorcerers, idolaters, and all liars shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death.”**<sup>33</sup>

## II Esdras 6:55-7:115 -

### *Why Do God's People Suffer?*

<sup>55</sup>“All this I have spoken before you, O Lord, because you have said that it was for us that you created this world. <sup>56</sup> As for the other nations that have descended from Adam, you have said that they are nothing, and that they are like spittle, and you have compared their abundance to a drop from a bucket. <sup>57</sup> And now, O Lord, these nations, which are reputed to be as nothing, domineer over us and devour us. <sup>58</sup> But we your people, whom you have called your firstborn, only begotten, zealous for you, and most dear, have been given into their hands. <sup>59</sup> If the world has indeed been created for us, why do we not possess our world as an inheritance? How long will this be so?”

### *Response to Ezra's Questions*

**7** When I had finished speaking these words, the angel who had been sent to me on the former nights was sent to me again. <sup>2</sup> He said to me, “Rise, Ezra, and listen to the words that I have come to speak to you.”

<sup>3</sup> I said, “Speak, my lord.” And he said to me, “There is a sea set in a wide expanse so that it is deep and vast, <sup>4</sup> but it has an entrance set in a narrow place, so that it is like a river. <sup>5</sup> If there are those who wish to reach the sea, to look at it or to navigate it, how can they come to the broad part unless they pass through the narrow part? <sup>6</sup> Another example: There is a city built and set on a plain, and it is full of all good things; <sup>7</sup> but the entrance to it is narrow and set in a precipitous place, so that there is fire on the right hand and deep water on the left. <sup>8</sup> There is only one path lying between them, that is, between the fire and the water, so that only one person can walk on the path. <sup>9</sup> If now the city is given to someone as an inheritance, how will the heir receive the inheritance unless by passing through the appointed danger?”

<sup>10</sup> I said, “That is right, lord.” He said to me, “So also is Israel's portion. <sup>11</sup> For I made the world for their sake, and when Adam transgressed my statutes, what had

---

<sup>33</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

been made was judged. <sup>12</sup> And so the entrances of this world were made narrow and sorrowful and toilsome; they are few and evil, full of dangers and involved in great hardships. <sup>13</sup> But the entrances of the greater world are broad and safe, and yield the fruit of immortality. <sup>14</sup> Therefore unless the living pass through the difficult and futile experiences, they can never receive those things that have been reserved for them. <sup>15</sup> Now therefore why are you disturbed, seeing that you are to perish? Why are you moved, seeing that you are mortal? <sup>16</sup> Why have you not considered in your mind what is to come, rather than what is now present?"

### *The Fate of the Ungodly*

<sup>17</sup> Then I answered and said, "O sovereign Lord, you have ordained in your law that the righteous shall inherit these things, but that the ungodly shall perish. <sup>18</sup> The righteous, therefore, can endure difficult circumstances while hoping for easier ones; but those who have done wickedly have suffered the difficult circumstances and will never see the easier ones."

<sup>19</sup> He said to me, "You are not a better judge than the Lord, or wiser than the Most High! <sup>20</sup> Let many perish who are now living, rather than that the law of God that is set before them be disregarded! <sup>21</sup> For the Lord strictly commanded those who came into the world, when they came, what they should do to live, and what they should observe to avoid punishment. <sup>22</sup> Nevertheless they were not obedient, and spoke against him;

they devised for themselves vain thoughts,  
<sup>23</sup> and proposed to themselves wicked frauds;  
they even declared that the Most High does not exist,  
and they ignored his ways.

<sup>24</sup> They scorned his law,  
and denied his covenants;  
they have been unfaithful to his statutes,  
and have not performed his works.

<sup>25</sup> That is the reason, Ezra, that empty things are for the empty, and full things are for the full.

### *The Temporary Messianic Kingdom*

<sup>26</sup> "For indeed the time will come, when the signs that I have foretold to you will come to pass, that the city that now is not seen shall appear, and the land that now is hidden shall be disclosed. <sup>27</sup> Everyone who has been delivered from the evils that I have foretold shall see my wonders. <sup>28</sup> For my son the Messiah shall be revealed with those who are with him, and those who remain shall rejoice four hundred years. <sup>29</sup> After those years my son the Messiah shall die, and all who draw human breath. <sup>30</sup> Then the world shall be turned back to primeval silence for seven days, as it was at the first beginnings, so that no one shall be left. <sup>31</sup> After seven days the world that is not yet awake shall be roused, and that which is corruptible shall perish. <sup>32</sup> The earth shall give up those who are asleep in it, and the dust those who rest there in silence; and the chambers shall give up the souls that have been committed to them. <sup>33</sup> The Most High shall be revealed on the seat of judgment, and compassion shall pass away, and patience shall be withdrawn. <sup>34</sup> Only judgment shall remain, truth shall stand, and faithfulness shall grow strong. <sup>35</sup> Recompense shall follow, and the reward shall be manifested; righteous deeds shall awake, and unrighteous deeds shall not sleep. <sup>36</sup> The pit of torment shall appear, and

opposite it shall be the place of rest; and the furnace of hell shall be disclosed, and opposite it the paradise of delight. <sup>37</sup> Then the Most High will say to the nations that have been raised from the dead, ‘Look now, and understand whom you have denied, whom you have not served, whose commandments you have despised. <sup>38</sup> Look on this side and on that; here are delight and rest, and there are fire and torments.’ Thus he will speak to them on the day of judgment— <sup>39</sup> a day that has no sun or moon or stars, <sup>40</sup> or cloud or thunder or lightning, or wind or water or air, or darkness or evening or morning, <sup>41</sup> or summer or spring or heat or winter or frost or cold, or hail or rain or dew, <sup>42</sup> or noon or night, or dawn or shining or brightness or light, but only the splendor of the glory of the Most High, by which all shall see what has been destined. <sup>43</sup> It will last as though for a week of years. <sup>44</sup> This is my judgment and its prescribed order; and to you alone I have shown these things.”

#### *Only a Few Will Be Saved*

<sup>45</sup> I answered and said, “O sovereign Lord, I said then and I say now: Blessed are those who are alive and keep your commandments! <sup>46</sup> But what of those for whom I prayed? For who among the living is there that has not sinned, or who is there among mortals that has not transgressed your covenant? <sup>47</sup> And now I see that the world to come will bring delight to few, but torments to many. <sup>48</sup> For an evil heart has grown up in us, which has alienated us from God, and has brought us into corruption and the ways of death, and has shown us the paths of perdition and removed us far from life—and that not merely for a few but for almost all who have been created.”

<sup>49</sup> He answered me and said, “Listen to me, Ezra, and I will instruct you, and will admonish you once more. <sup>50</sup> For this reason the Most High has made not one world but two. <sup>51</sup> Inasmuch as you have said that the righteous are not many but few, while the ungodly abound, hear the explanation for this.

<sup>52</sup> “If you have just a few precious stones, will you add to them lead and clay?” <sup>53</sup> I said, “Lord, how could that be?” <sup>54</sup> And he said to me, “Not only that, but ask the earth and she will tell you; defer to her, and she will declare it to you. <sup>55</sup> Say to her, ‘You produce gold and silver and bronze, and also iron and lead and clay; <sup>56</sup> but silver is more abundant than gold, and bronze than silver, and iron than bronze, and lead than iron, and clay than lead.’ <sup>57</sup> Judge therefore which things are precious and desirable, those that are abundant or those that are rare?”

<sup>58</sup> I said, “O sovereign Lord, what is plentiful is of less worth, for what is more rare is more precious.”

**<sup>59</sup> He answered me and said, “Consider within yourself what you have thought, for the person who has what is hard to get rejoices more than the person who has what is plentiful. <sup>60</sup> So also will be the judgment that I have promised; for I will rejoice over the few who shall be saved, because it is they who have made my glory to prevail now, and through them my name has now been honored. <sup>61</sup> I will not grieve over the great number of those who perish; for it is they who are now like a mist, and are similar to a flame and smoke—they are set on fire and burn hotly, and are extinguished.”**

#### *Lamentation of Ezra, with Response*

<sup>62</sup> I replied and said, “O earth, what have you brought forth, if the mind is made out of the dust like the other created things? <sup>63</sup> For it would have been better if the

dust itself had not been born, so that the mind might not have been made from it. <sup>64</sup> But now the mind grows with us, and therefore we are tormented, because we perish and we know it. <sup>65</sup> Let the human race lament, but let the wild animals of the field be glad; let all who have been born lament, but let the cattle and the flocks rejoice. <sup>66</sup> It is much better with them than with us; for they do not look for a judgment, and they do not know of any torment or salvation promised to them after death. <sup>67</sup> What does it profit us that we shall be preserved alive but cruelly tormented? <sup>68</sup> For all who have been born are entangled in iniquities, and are full of sins and burdened with transgressions. <sup>69</sup> And if after death we were not to come into judgment, perhaps it would have been better for us.”

**70 He answered me and said, “When the Most High made the world and Adam and all who have come from him, he first prepared the judgment and the things that pertain to the judgment. <sup>71</sup> But now, understand from your own words—for you have said that the mind grows with us. <sup>72</sup> For this reason, therefore, those who live on earth shall be tormented, because though they had understanding, they committed iniquity; and though they received the commandments, they did not keep them; and though they obtained the law, they dealt unfaithfully with what they received. <sup>73</sup> What, then, will they have to say in the judgment, or how will they answer in the last times? <sup>74</sup> How long the Most High has been patient with those who inhabit the world!—and not for their sake, but because of the times that he has foreordained.”**

#### *State of the Dead before Judgment*

<sup>75</sup> I answered and said, “If I have found favor in your sight, O Lord, show this also to your servant: whether after death, as soon as everyone of us yields up the soul, we shall be kept in rest until those times come when you will renew the creation, or whether we shall be tormented at once?”

<sup>76</sup> He answered me and said, “I will show you that also, but do not include yourself with those who have shown scorn, or number yourself among those who are tormented. <sup>77</sup> For you have a treasure of works stored up with the Most High, but it will not be shown to you until the last times. <sup>78</sup> **Now concerning death, the teaching is: When the decisive decree has gone out from the Most High that a person shall die, as the spirit leaves the body to return again to him who gave it, first of all it adores the glory of the Most High. <sup>79</sup> If it is one of those who have shown scorn and have not kept the way of the Most High, who have despised his law and hated those who fear God— <sup>80</sup> such spirits shall not enter into habitations, but shall immediately wander about in torments, always grieving and sad, in seven ways. <sup>81</sup> The first way, because they have scorned the law of the Most High. <sup>82</sup> The second way, because they cannot now make a good repentance so that they may live. <sup>83</sup> The third way, they shall see the reward laid up for those who have trusted the covenants of the Most High. <sup>84</sup> The fourth way, they shall consider the torment laid up for themselves in the last days. <sup>85</sup> The fifth way, they shall see how the habitations of the others are guarded by angels in profound quiet. <sup>86</sup> The sixth way, they shall see how some of them will cross over into torments. <sup>87</sup> The seventh way, which is worse than all the ways that have been mentioned, because they shall utterly waste away in confusion and be consumed with shame, and shall wither with fear at seeing the glory of the Most High in whose**



presence they sinned while they were alive, and in whose presence they are to be judged in the last times.

88 “Now this is the order of those who have kept the ways of the Most High, when they shall be separated from their mortal body. <sup>89</sup> During the time that they lived in it, they laboriously served the Most High, and withstood danger every hour so that they might keep the law of the Lawgiver perfectly. <sup>90</sup> Therefore this is the teaching concerning them: <sup>91</sup> First of all, they shall see with great joy the glory of him who receives them, for they shall have rest in seven orders. <sup>92</sup> The first order, because they have striven with great effort to overcome the evil thought that was formed with them, so that it might not lead them astray from life into death. <sup>93</sup> The second order, because they see the perplexity in which the souls of the ungodly wander and the punishment that awaits them. <sup>94</sup> The third order, they see the witness that he who formed them bears concerning them, that throughout their life they kept the law with which they were entrusted. <sup>95</sup> The fourth order, they understand the rest that they now enjoy, being gathered into their chambers and guarded by angels in profound quiet, and the glory waiting for them in the last days. <sup>96</sup> The fifth order, they rejoice that they have now escaped what is corruptible and shall inherit what is to come; and besides they see the straits and toil from which they have been delivered, and the spacious liberty that they are to receive and enjoy in immortality. <sup>97</sup> The sixth order, when it is shown them how their face is to shine like the sun, and how they are to be made like the light of the stars, being incorruptible from then on. <sup>98</sup> The seventh order, which is greater than all that have been mentioned, because they shall rejoice with boldness, and shall be confident without confusion, and shall be glad without fear, for they press forward to see the face of him whom they served in life and from whom they are to receive their reward when glorified. <sup>99</sup> This is the order of the souls of the righteous, as henceforth is announced; and the previously mentioned are the ways of torment that those who would not give heed shall suffer hereafter.”

100 Then I answered and said, “Will time therefore be given to the souls, after they have been separated from the bodies, to see what you have described to me?”

101 He said to me, “They shall have freedom for seven days, so that during these seven days they may see the things of which you have been told, and afterwards they shall be gathered in their habitations.”

#### *No Intercession for the Ungodly*

102 I answered and said, “If I have found favor in your sight, show further to me, your servant, whether on the day of judgment the righteous will be able to intercede for the ungodly or to entreat the Most High for them— <sup>103</sup> fathers for sons or sons for parents, brothers for brothers, relatives for their kindred, or friends for those who are most dear.”

104 He answered me and said, “Since you have found favor in my sight, I will show you this also. The day of judgment is decisive and displays to all the seal of truth. Just as now a father does not send his son, or a son his father, or a master his servant, or a friend his dearest friend, to be ill or sleep or eat or be healed in his place, <sup>105</sup> so no one shall ever pray for another on that day, neither shall anyone lay a burden on another; for then all shall bear their own righteousness and unrighteousness.”

**36** <sup>106</sup> I answered and said, “How then do we find that first Abraham prayed for the people of Sodom, and Moses for our ancestors who sinned in the desert, <sup>37</sup> <sup>107</sup> and Joshua after him for Israel in the days of Achan, <sup>38</sup> <sup>108</sup> and Samuel in the days of Saul, and David for the plague, and Solomon for those at the dedication, <sup>39</sup> <sup>109</sup> and Elijah for those who received the rain, and for the one who was dead, that he might live, <sup>40</sup> <sup>110</sup> and Hezekiah for the people in the days of Sennacherib, and many others prayed for many? <sup>41</sup> <sup>111</sup> So if now, when corruption has increased and unrighteousness has multiplied, the righteous have prayed for the ungodly, why will it not be so then as well?”

**42** <sup>112</sup> He answered me and said, “This present world is not the end; the full glory does not remain in it; therefore those who were strong prayed for the weak. <sup>43</sup> <sup>113</sup> But the day of judgment will be the end of this age and the beginning of the immortal age to come, in which corruption has passed away, <sup>44</sup> <sup>114</sup> sinful indulgence has come to an end, unbelief has been cut off, and righteousness has increased and truth has appeared. <sup>45</sup> <sup>115</sup> Therefore no one will then be able to have mercy on someone who has been condemned in the judgment, or to harm someone who is victorious.”<sup>34</sup>

*Lest it be misunderstood, I wish to explain the scriptures in II Esdras 7:26-44 above. Some have questioned all of II Esdras based upon their misunderstanding of these scriptures, especially v. 29 which states that the Messiah, (i.e., the Christ or Deliverer) will ‘die’, as will ‘all who draw human breath’. It also says in v. 28 that upon Jesus’ second coming that there will be rejoicing for four hundred years. In v. 29 it says, ‘after those years’ is when the Messiah and all human life will ‘die’. This seems in contrast to the scriptures in Revelation chapter 20 which describe the millennial reign of Jesus and the saints. However if one looks at it carefully with open spiritual eyes, it is no more difficult to ‘see’ than some of the scriptures in Daniel chapters 7-12 that seem to contradict themselves with the scriptures in Revelation and elsewhere. What the scriptures in II Esdras 7:26-44 are describing IS the second coming of Jesus and the millennial reign of Him and the saints. It is saying that the first 400 years of the millennial reign will be a celebration. Then there is a ‘time gap’, (which is common in the Word of God) between v. 28 and v. 29, not mentioning what will happen during the remaining 600 years. According to Revelation chapter 20, at the end of the millennial reign Satan will be released for a short time to deceive all whom he can, then the time for human life will EXPIRE or ‘die’ along with all who are still in human form and have refused salvation through Jesus. The time of GRACE through accepting Jesus will at that time EXPIRE, thus the Messiah or salvation through the Christ will ‘die’ or EXPIRE. There will no longer be a need for Jesus to play the role of the Deliverer, Messiah or the Christ. The time for salvation and mortal human existence will be finished, expired or ‘dead’. Satan will be cast into the lake of fire, the second resurrection will occur and Judgment Day will take place. All those found wanting will be cast into the lake of fire and the old heaven and earth will be burned up. Then the New Jerusalem will appear. For those with true Holy Spirit inspired understanding, the verses in II Esdras referred to here in no way contradicts the scriptures in the Bible, but rather they confirm it.*

---

<sup>34</sup>The New Revised Standard Version, (Nashville, TN: Thomas Nelson Publishers) 1989.

## **II. The purpose of this teaching and OVERVIEW -**

*Now we understand the overall plan of God for mankind; that He created humans with eternal potential as possible replacements for the fallen angels. However unlike the case of the fallen angels who are immortal, God retains the ability to permanently destroy humans that are rebellious and unrepentant. **People who refuse to repent and accept Jesus Christ as their Lord and Savior to be 'born again' from above, of the Holy Spirit will ultimately end up in the lake of fire and will be destroyed forever.** God created humans and then allowed some of the people on earth to be taken over by Satan and become the 'children of the devil', (see Matthew 13:24-43, Romans 9:21-23 and I John 3:10 above). These evil people will test the true children of God via persecution and suffering. In this way God would be able to find out whether or not His children would obey Him and trust in Him, regardless of the situation, (i.e., have 'faith'). God's true people would know, (since He tells us this in His Word) that the suffering would do them good in the end and that He would eventually turn things in their favor, (see the teaching, 'SUFFERING - The Key to Obedience', Deuteronomy chapter 8 and Romans 8:28 above). **In Revelation 21:7 above we see that the kingdom of God and eternal life in His presence is reserved for obedient, 'born again' Christians who OVERCOME. These people will inherit all eternal things. In this teaching we will look at the things that we must OVERCOME in this life and the counter characteristics that we must develop in order to prepare for the next, eternal life.***

*We all have choices in this life that will ultimately determine our destiny. God wants us to choose to follow after the true, Godly ways as He has outlined in His Word. If we choose this way of life, He promises to offer us help to obey Him through His Son, Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit. **With the help of Jesus and the Holy Spirit, there will be power to OVERCOME the evil of this world.** In this life, there will be suffering both for doing the wrong things, as well as suffering for righteousness sake, (i.e., persecution for obeying God). Although the latter category does not seem 'fair', one purpose for it is to ingrain into us the understanding of what it feels like to be 'hated without a cause'. As we said above, this is how God felt when Lucifer rebelled for no reason, as he 'had it all'. Both types of suffering will lead us to learn to obey and completely rely upon God and thus open the door for us to become perfected in Christ in this life, as well as the next. On the other hand, if people choose to reject Jesus Christ then they will be destined to eventually end up in hell and ultimately will be permanently destroyed in the lake of fire.*

*These two divergent paths are something that God created for humans, but **WE CHOOSE** which one we will follow. The narrow, righteous path through Christ will involve suffering **NOW** in order to avoid suffering eternal loss. The wide road of rebellion in this life may be rewarded now with material gain and/or physical pleasure, but the cost will be long-term suffering in hell for many, many years and the loss of eternal life through destruction in the lake of fire. Unfortunately, the path to perfection in Christ, (i.e., the 'narrow gate' that leads to eternal life) is difficult to find and to stay on. Few truly find and stay on it. The path that leads to destruction is wide and most people will take this path due to pride. In this section we will outline both the things that we must overcome*

*and the associated works of the flesh, as well as the counter Godly characteristics and associated fruits of the Holy Spirit. Both bad and good characteristics are developed in humans during their lifetime on earth, though the good ones are much more difficult to work into a person. For those who want to enter the kingdom of heaven, it is necessary to develop the Godly characteristics and OVERCOME the evil ones, (see the teaching, 'The Path to Perfection', Hebrews 5:5-11 above, Deuteronomy 30:11-20, Matthew 7:13-14, 16:21-28, Luke 10:19-20, Galatians 5:16-26, Hebrews 2:5-18 and I Peter 3:8-22).*

### **Deuteronomy 30:11-20 -**

<sup>11</sup>“For this commandment which I command you today *is not too* mysterious for you, nor *is* it far off. <sup>12</sup>“It *is* not in heaven, that you should say, ‘Who will ascend into heaven for us and bring it to us, that we may hear it and do it?’ <sup>13</sup>“Nor *is* it beyond the sea, that you should say, ‘Who will go over the sea for us and bring it to us, that we may hear it and do it?’ <sup>14</sup>“**But the word *is* very near you, in your mouth and in your heart, that you may do it.**

<sup>15</sup>“See, I have set before you today life and good, death and evil, <sup>16</sup>“in that I command you today to love the LORD your God, to walk in His ways, and to keep His commandments, His statutes, and His judgments, that you may live and multiply; and the LORD your God will bless you in the land which you go to possess. <sup>17</sup>“But if your heart turns away so that you do not hear, and are drawn away, and worship other gods and serve them, <sup>18</sup>“I announce to you today that you shall surely perish; you shall not prolong *your* days in the land which you cross over the Jordan to go in and possess. <sup>19</sup>“**I call heaven and earth as witnesses today against you, *that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing; therefore choose life, that both you and your descendants may live;*** <sup>20</sup>“that you may love the LORD your God, that you may obey His voice, and that you may cling to Him, for He *is* your life and the length of your days; and that you may dwell in the land which the LORD swore to your fathers, to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, to give them.”<sup>35</sup>

### **Matthew 7:13-14 -**

<sup>13</sup>“Enter by the narrow gate; for wide *is* the gate and **broad *is* the way that leads to destruction,** and there are many who go in by it. <sup>14</sup>“Because **narrow *is* the gate and difficult *is* the way which leads to life,** and there are few who find it.<sup>36</sup>

### **Matthew 16:21-28 -**

<sup>21</sup>From that time Jesus began to show to His disciples that He must go to Jerusalem, and suffer many things from the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised the third day. <sup>22</sup>Then Peter took Him aside and began to rebuke

---

<sup>35</sup>The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>36</sup>The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

Him, saying, “Far be it from You, Lord; this shall not happen to You!” <sup>23</sup>**But He turned and said to Peter, “Get behind Me, Satan! You are an offense to Me, for you are not mindful of the things of God, but the things of men.”**

<sup>24</sup>**Then Jesus said to His disciples, “If anyone desires to come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow Me. <sup>25</sup>“For whoever desires to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for My sake will find it. <sup>26</sup>“For what profit is it to a man if he gains the whole world, and loses his own soul? Or what will a man give in exchange for his soul? <sup>27</sup>“For the Son of Man will come in the glory of His Father with His angels, and then He will reward each according to his works. <sup>28</sup>“Assuredly, I say to you, there are some standing here who shall not taste death till they see the Son of Man coming in His kingdom.”<sup>37</sup>**

#### **Luke 10:19-20 -**

<sup>19</sup>**“Behold, I give you the authority to trample on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy, and nothing shall by any means hurt you. <sup>20</sup>“Nevertheless do not rejoice in this, that the spirits are subject to you, but rather rejoice because your names are written in heaven.”<sup>38</sup>**

#### **Galatians 5:16-26 -**

<sup>16</sup>I say then: Walk in the Spirit, and you shall not fulfill the lust of the flesh. <sup>17</sup>For the flesh lusts against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh; and these are contrary to one another, so that you do not do the things that you wish. <sup>18</sup>But if you are led by the Spirit, you are not under the law. <sup>19</sup>**Now the works of the flesh are evident, which are: adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lewdness, <sup>20</sup>idolatry, sorcery, hatred, contentions, jealousies, outbursts of wrath, selfish ambitions, dissensions, heresies, <sup>21</sup>envy, murders, drunkenness, revelries, and the like; of which I tell you beforehand, just as I also told *you* in time past, that those who practice such things will not inherit the kingdom of God. <sup>22</sup>But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, <sup>23</sup>gentleness, self-control. Against such there is no law. <sup>24</sup>And those *who are* Christ’s have crucified the flesh with its passions and desires. <sup>25</sup>If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit. <sup>26</sup>Let us not become conceited, provoking one another, envying one another.<sup>39</sup>**

#### **Hebrews 2:5-18 -**

<sup>5</sup>For He has not put the world to come, of which we speak, in subjection to angels. <sup>6</sup>But one testified in a certain place, saying:

---

<sup>37</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>38</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>39</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

“What is man that You are mindful of him,  
 Or the son of man that You take care of him?  
 7 You have made him a little lower than the angels;  
 You have crowned him with glory and honor,  
 And set him over the works of Your hands.  
 8 You have put all things in subjection under his feet.”

For in that He put all in subjection under him, He left nothing *that is* not put under him. But now we do not yet see all things put under him. **<sup>9</sup>But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels, for the suffering of death crowned with glory and honor, that He, by the grace of God, might taste death for everyone.**

**<sup>10</sup>For it was fitting for Him, for whom *are* all things and by whom *are* all things, in bringing many sons to glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings. <sup>11</sup>For both He who sanctifies and those who are being sanctified *are* all of one, for which reason He is not ashamed to call them brethren, <sup>12</sup>saying:**

**“I will declare Your name to My brethren;  
 In the midst of the assembly I will sing praise to You.”**

**<sup>13</sup>And again:**

**“I will put My trust in Him.”**

**And again:**

**“Here am I and the children whom God has given Me.”**

**<sup>14</sup>Inasmuch then as the children have partaken of flesh and blood, He Himself likewise shared in the same, that through death He might destroy him who had the power of death, that is, the devil, <sup>15</sup>and release those who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage. <sup>16</sup>For indeed He does not give aid to angels, but He does give aid to the seed of Abraham. <sup>17</sup>Therefore, in all things He had to be made like *His* brethren, that He might be a merciful and faithful High Priest in things *pertaining* to God, to make propitiation for the sins of the people. <sup>18</sup>**For in that He Himself has suffered, being tempted, He is able to aid those who are tempted.**<sup>40</sup>**

### **I Peter 3:8-22 -**

<sup>8</sup>Finally, all *of you be* of one mind, having compassion for one another; love as brothers, *be* tenderhearted, *be* courteous; <sup>9</sup>not returning evil for evil or reviling for reviling, but on the contrary blessing, knowing that you were called to this, that you may inherit a blessing.

<sup>10</sup> For “He who would love life  
 And see good days,  
 Let him refrain his tongue from evil,  
 And his lips from speaking deceit.

<sup>11</sup> Let him turn away from evil and do good;  
 Let him seek peace and pursue it.

---

<sup>40</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>12</sup> For the eyes of the LORD *are* on the righteous,  
And His ears *are open* to their prayers;  
But the face of the LORD *is* against those who do evil.”

<sup>13</sup>And who *is* he who will harm you if you become followers of what is good? <sup>14</sup>But even if you should suffer for righteousness’ sake, *you are* blessed. “And do not be afraid of their threats, nor be troubled.” <sup>15</sup>But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts, and always *be* ready to *give* a defense to everyone who asks you a reason for the hope that is in you, with meekness and fear; <sup>16</sup>having a good conscience, that when they defame you as evildoers, those who revile your good conduct in Christ may be ashamed. <sup>17</sup>**For *it is* better, if it is the will of God, to suffer for doing good than for doing evil.**

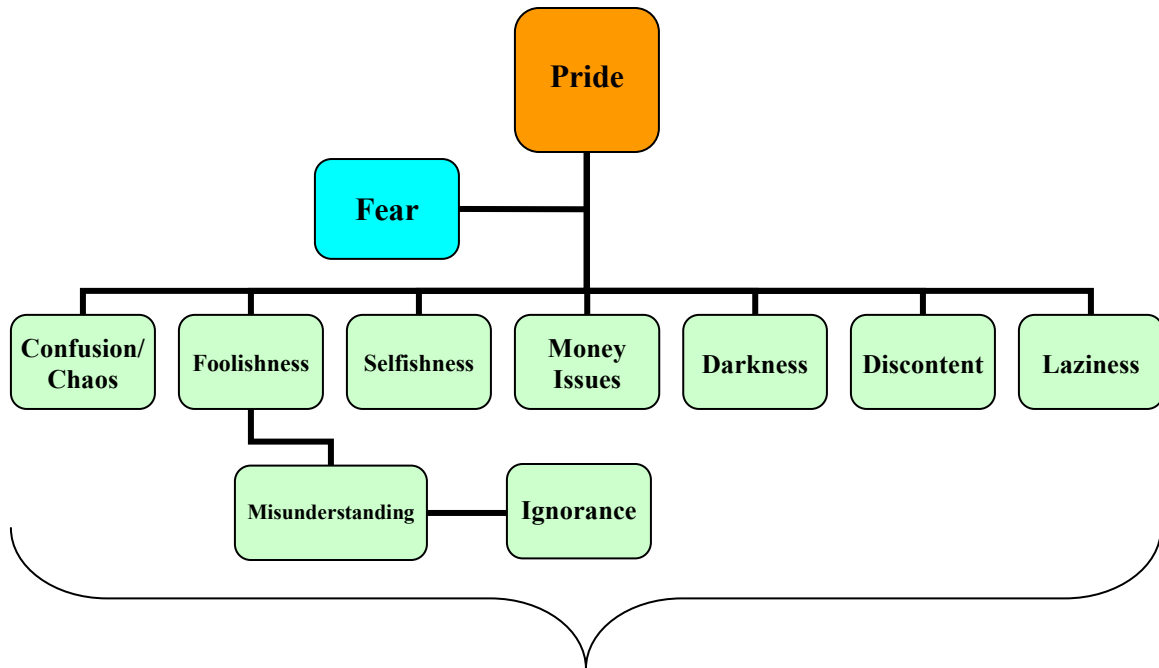
<sup>18</sup>**For Christ also suffered once for sins, the just for the unjust, that He might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh but made alive by the Spirit, <sup>19</sup>by whom also He went and preached to the spirits in prison, <sup>20</sup>who formerly were disobedient, when once the Divine longsuffering waited in the days of Noah, while *the* ark was being prepared, in which a few, that is, eight souls, were saved through water. <sup>21</sup>There is also an antitype which now saves us—baptism (not the removal of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God), through the resurrection of Jesus Christ, <sup>22</sup>who has gone into heaven and is at the right hand of God, angels and authorities and powers having been made subject to Him.**<sup>41</sup>

**A. Outline of the things that we must overcome and associated works of the flesh**  
(see Galatians 5:19-21 above) -

- 1) **Pride** - outbursts of wrath
- 2) **Fear** - hatred/hostility
- 3) **Confusion/Chaos** - dissensions/divisions, heresies, (the feeling that everyone is wrong except those in your own little group)
- 4) **Foolishness** →  
  - Misunderstanding** →
  - Ignorance** - adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lewdness, drunkenness
- 5) **Selfishness** - contentions/quarrelling, selfish ambitions, murders
- 6) **Money Issues** - ‘adultery’
- 7) **Darkness** - idolatry, sorcery, (participation in demonic activities) uncleanness
- 8) **Discontent/Wanting more** - jealousies, envy
- 9) **Laziness** - revelries

---

<sup>41</sup>The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

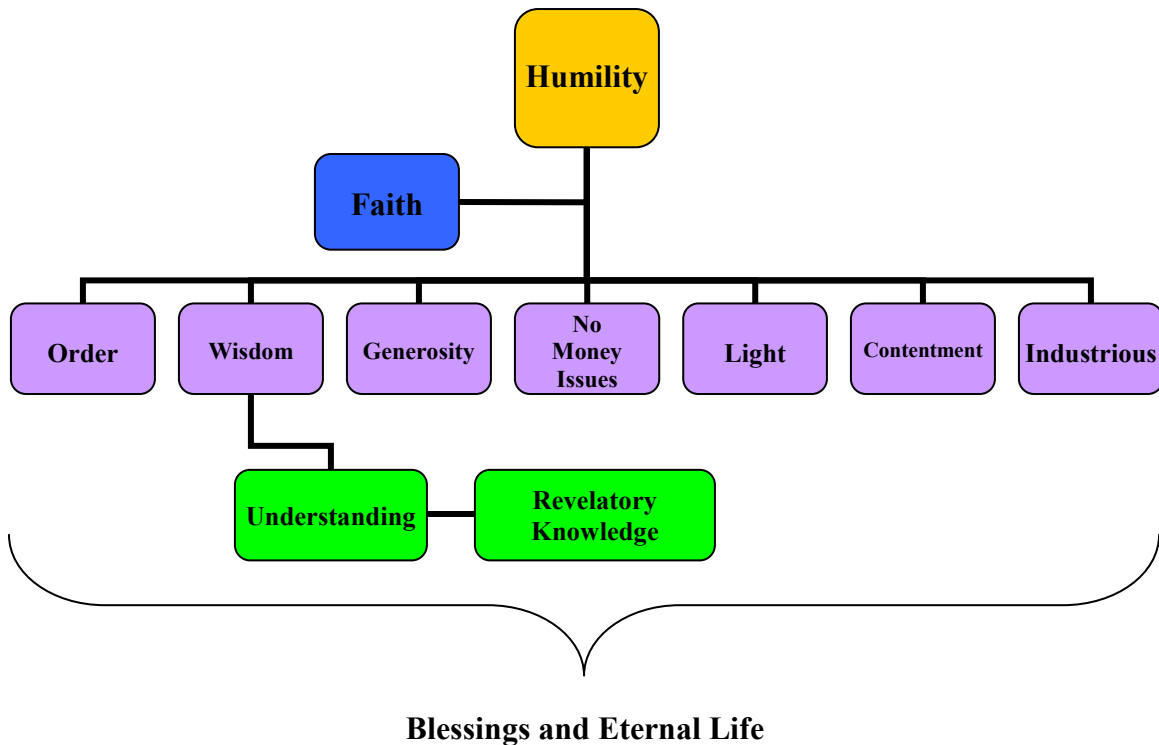


**Destruction and Eternal Death**

**B. Outline characteristics that true Christians have and associated fruits of the Spirit** (see Galatians 5:22-23 above) -

- 1) **Humility** - kindness
- 2) **Faith** - love
- 3) **Order** - peace
- 4) **Wisdom** →  
     **Understanding** →  
     **Revelatory Knowledge** - patience
- 5) **Generosity** - goodness
- 6) **No Money Issues** - joy
- 7) **Light** - gentleness
- 8) **Contentment** - self-control
- 9) **Industriousness** - faithfulness





### III. THINGS TO OVERCOME and GODLY COUNTER-CHARACTERISTICS -

#### A. **Pride vs. Humility -**

*Pride is the thing that led to the fall of Lucifer. Often times people will say that 'pride comes before a fall'. This is true, but really the Bible says that **'PRIDE GOES BEFORE DESTRUCTION and a haughty spirit before a fall'**. Thus the Bible warns of an even more severe result of allowing pride to operate in one's life. Something else that people often misquote from the Bible is that they say that 'money is the root of all evil'. What the Bible actually says is that the **'LOVE OF MONEY IS THE ROOT OF ALL KINDS OF EVIL'**. I would submit that it is really **PRIDE which is the root of every evil on earth and was the root cause of the evil that God vanquished from heaven when He cast Lucifer out.** We will see in this section how **pride leads to all evil** and that this is the main attribute of Satan which God wants us to overcome before He will grant us eternal life in His presence. Anyone with a proud heart is an **ABOMINATION** to God. **However, the love of money and pride are interconnected.** Many people who walk in pride do so in order to gain an increase in finances. Even in the Christian church, some people use the Word of God for gain. This too is offensive to God. It is better to have a little money and be humble before the Lord than to have a lot of money and walk in pride. Money will not save anyone on the Day of Judgment. **HUMILITY, (which is power under God's control - also known as a repentant or contrite heart/spirit) is the opposite of pride and the main eternal characteristic that we need to develop in this life in order to prepare for***

***eternity in the presence of God.*** *The Godly characteristic of humility has to be worked into us as we make prideful errors, then God punishes us and ultimately He brings us out of that 'suffering for stupidity'. In this process if we will receive the correction that comes in the form of sickness and financial loss, acknowledge our error and repent, then God in His mercy will forgive us and set us upright again to help us do better in the future. This process, with the help of Jesus and the Holy Spirit, will humble us and lead us closer and closer to God. It will help us to fear God and treat other people with kindness. Anyone who believes that it is the devil that makes people sick does not know the Word or God. The devil cannot touch a human being, (especially a child of God) without God's permission, (see Deuteronomy chapter 28, 32:39-43, Job 1:1-28, Psalm chapters 38, 39, 49 and 51, Proverbs 11:4, chapters 15-16, Isaiah 66:1-2, Luke 22:31-34, I Timothy chapter 6 and Sirach 10:6-18).*

## **Deuteronomy Chapter 28 -**

### **Chapter 28**

<sup>1</sup>“Now it shall come to pass, if you diligently obey the voice of the LORD your God, to observe carefully all His commandments which I command you today, that the LORD your God will set you high above all nations of the earth. <sup>2</sup>“And all these blessings shall come upon you and overtake you, because you obey the voice of the LORD your God: <sup>3</sup>“Blessed *shall you be* in the city, and blessed *shall you be* in the country. <sup>4</sup>“Blessed *shall be* the fruit of your body, the produce of your ground and the increase of your herds, the increase of your cattle and the offspring of your flocks. <sup>5</sup>“Blessed *shall be* your basket and your kneading bowl. <sup>6</sup>“Blessed *shall you be* when you come in, and blessed *shall you be* when you go out.

<sup>7</sup>“The LORD will cause your enemies who rise against you to be defeated before your face; they shall come out against you one way and flee before you seven ways. <sup>8</sup>“The LORD will command the blessing on you in your storehouses and in all to which you set your hand, and He will bless you in the land which the LORD your God is giving you. <sup>9</sup>“The LORD will establish you as a holy people to Himself, just as He has sworn to you, if you keep the commandments of the LORD your God and walk in His ways. <sup>10</sup>“Then all peoples of the earth shall see that you are called by the name of the LORD, and they shall be afraid of you. <sup>11</sup>“And the LORD will grant you plenty of goods, in the fruit of your body, in the increase of your livestock, and in the produce of your ground, in the land of which the LORD swore to your fathers to give you. <sup>12</sup>“The LORD will open to you His good treasure, the heavens, to give the rain to your land in its season, and to bless all the work of your hand. You shall lend to many nations, but you shall not borrow. <sup>13</sup>“And the LORD will make you the head and not the tail; you shall be above only, and not be beneath, if you heed the commandments of the LORD your God, which I command you today, and are careful to observe *them*. <sup>14</sup>“So you shall not turn aside from any of the words which I command you this day, *to* the right or the left, to go after other gods to serve them.

<sup>15</sup>“But it shall come to pass, if you do not obey the voice of the LORD your God, to observe carefully all His commandments and His statutes which I command you today, that all these curses will come upon you and overtake you: <sup>16</sup>“Cursed *shall you be* in the city, and cursed *shall you be* in the country. <sup>17</sup>“Cursed *shall be* your basket and your

kneading bowl. <sup>18</sup>“Cursed *shall be* the fruit of your body and the produce of your land, the increase of your cattle and the offspring of your flocks. <sup>19</sup>“Cursed *shall you be* when you come in, and cursed *shall you be* when you go out.

<sup>20</sup>“The LORD will send on you cursing, confusion, and rebuke in all that you set your hand to do, until you are destroyed and until you perish quickly, because of the wickedness of your doings in which you have forsaken Me. <sup>21</sup>“The LORD will make the plague cling to you until He has consumed you from the land which you are going to possess. <sup>22</sup>“The LORD will strike you with consumption, with fever, with inflammation, with severe burning fever, with the sword, with scorching, and with mildew; they shall pursue you until you perish. <sup>23</sup>“And your heavens which *are* over your head shall be bronze, and the earth which is under you *shall be* iron. <sup>24</sup>“The LORD will change the rain of your land to powder and dust; from the heaven it shall come down on you until you are destroyed. <sup>25</sup>“The LORD will cause you to be defeated before your enemies; you shall go out one way against them and flee seven ways before them; and you shall become troublesome to all the kingdoms of the earth. <sup>26</sup>“Your carcasses shall be food for all the birds of the air and the beasts of the earth, and no one shall frighten *them* away. <sup>27</sup>“The LORD will strike you with the boils of Egypt, with tumors, with the scab, and with the itch, from which you cannot be healed. <sup>28</sup>“The LORD will strike you with madness and blindness and confusion of heart. <sup>29</sup>“And you shall grope at noonday, as a blind man gropes in darkness; you shall not prosper in your ways; you shall be only oppressed and plundered continually, and no one shall save *you*. <sup>30</sup>“You shall betroth a wife, but another man shall lie with her; you shall build a house, but you shall not dwell in it; you shall plant a vineyard, but shall not gather its grapes. <sup>31</sup>“Your ox *shall be* slaughtered before your eyes, but you shall not eat of it; your donkey *shall be* violently taken away from before you, and shall not be restored to you; your sheep *shall be* given to your enemies, and you shall have no one to rescue *them*. <sup>32</sup>“Your sons and your daughters *shall be* given to another people, and your eyes shall look and fail *with longing* for them all day long; and *there shall be* no strength in your hand. <sup>33</sup>“A nation whom you have not known shall eat the fruit of your land and the produce of your labor, and you shall be only oppressed and crushed continually. <sup>34</sup>“So you shall be driven mad because of the sight which your eyes see. <sup>35</sup>“The LORD will strike you in the knees and on the legs with severe boils which cannot be healed, and from the sole of your foot to the top of your head. <sup>36</sup>“The LORD will bring you and the king whom you set over you to a nation which neither you nor your fathers have known, and there you shall serve other gods—wood and stone. <sup>37</sup>“And you shall become an astonishment, a proverb, and a byword among all nations where the LORD will drive you. <sup>38</sup>“You shall carry much seed out to the field but gather little in, for the locust shall consume it. <sup>39</sup>“You shall plant vineyards and tend *them*, but you shall neither drink *of* the wine nor gather the *grapes*; for the worms shall eat them. <sup>40</sup>“You shall have olive trees throughout all your territory, but you shall not anoint *yourself* with the oil; for your olives shall drop off. <sup>41</sup>“You shall beget sons and daughters, but they shall not be yours; for they shall go into captivity. <sup>42</sup>“Locusts shall consume all your trees and the produce of your land. <sup>43</sup>“The alien who *is* among you shall rise higher and higher above you, and you shall come down lower and lower. <sup>44</sup>“He shall lend to you, but you shall not lend to him; he shall be the head, and you shall be the tail. <sup>45</sup>“Moreover all these curses shall come upon you and pursue and overtake you, until you are destroyed, because you did not obey the voice of the LORD your God, to keep His

commandments and His statutes which He commanded you. <sup>46</sup>“And they shall be upon you for a sign and a wonder, and on your descendants forever.

<sup>47</sup>“Because you did not serve the LORD your God with joy and gladness of heart, for the abundance of everything, <sup>48</sup>“therefore you shall serve your enemies, whom the LORD will send against you, in hunger, in thirst, in nakedness, and in need of everything; and He will put a yoke of iron on your neck until He has destroyed you. <sup>49</sup>“The LORD will bring a nation against you from afar, from the end of the earth, *as swift* as the eagle flies, a nation whose language you will not understand, <sup>50</sup>“a nation of fierce countenance, which does not respect the elderly nor show favor to the young. <sup>51</sup>“And they shall eat the increase of your livestock and the produce of your land, until you are destroyed; they shall not leave you grain or new wine or oil, *or* the increase of your cattle or the offspring of your flocks, until they have destroyed you. <sup>52</sup>“They shall besiege you at all your gates until your high and fortified walls, in which you trust, come down throughout all your land; and they shall besiege you at all your gates throughout all your land which the LORD your God has given you. <sup>53</sup>“You shall eat the fruit of your own body, the flesh of your sons and your daughters whom the LORD your God has given you, in the siege and desperate straits in which your enemy shall distress you. <sup>54</sup>“The sensitive and very refined man among you will be hostile toward his brother, toward the wife of his bosom, and toward the rest of his children whom he leaves behind, <sup>55</sup>“so that he will not give any of them the flesh of his children whom he will eat, because he has nothing left in the siege and desperate straits in which your enemy shall distress you at all your gates. <sup>56</sup>“The tender and delicate woman among you, who would not venture to set the sole of her foot on the ground because of her delicateness and sensitivity, will refuse to the husband of her bosom, and to her son and her daughter, <sup>57</sup>“her placenta which comes out from between her feet and her children whom she bears; for she will eat them secretly for lack of everything in the siege and desperate straits in which your enemy shall distress you at all your gates.

<sup>58</sup>“**If you do not carefully observe all the words of this law that are written in this book, that you may fear this glorious and awesome name, THE LORD YOUR GOD,** <sup>59</sup>“**then the LORD will bring upon you and your descendants extraordinary plagues—great and prolonged plagues—and serious and prolonged sicknesses.** <sup>60</sup>“**Moreover He will bring back on you all the diseases of Egypt, of which you were afraid, and they shall cling to you.** <sup>61</sup>“**Also every sickness and every plague, which is not written in this Book of the Law, will the LORD bring upon you until you are destroyed.** <sup>62</sup>“**You shall be left few in number, whereas you were as the stars of heaven in multitude, because you would not obey the voice of the LORD your God.** <sup>63</sup>“**And it shall be, that just as the LORD rejoiced over you to do you good and multiply you, so the LORD will rejoice over you to destroy you and bring you to nothing; and you shall be plucked from off the land which you go to possess.**

<sup>64</sup>“Then the LORD will scatter you among all peoples, from one end of the earth to the other, and there you shall serve other gods, which neither you nor your fathers have known—wood and stone. <sup>65</sup>“And among those nations you shall find no rest, nor shall the sole of your foot have a resting place; but there the LORD will give you a trembling heart, failing eyes, and anguish of soul. <sup>66</sup>“Your life shall hang in doubt before you; you shall fear day and night, and have no assurance of life. <sup>67</sup>“In the morning you shall say, ‘Oh, that it were evening!’ And at evening you shall say, ‘Oh, that it were morning!’ because

of the fear which terrifies your heart, and because of the sight which your eyes see.  
<sup>68</sup>“And the LORD will take you back to Egypt in ships, by the way of which I said to you,  
 ‘You shall never see it again.’ And there you shall be offered for sale to your enemies as  
 male and female slaves, but no one will buy *you*.”<sup>42</sup>

### Deuteronomy 32:39-43 -

<sup>39</sup>       **‘Now see that I, *even I, am He,*  
 And *there is no God besides Me;*  
 I kill and I make alive;  
 I wound and I heal;  
 Nor *is there any who can deliver from My hand.***

<sup>40</sup>       For I raise My hand to heaven,  
 And say, “*As I live forever,*  
<sup>41</sup>       If I whet My glittering sword,  
 And My hand takes hold on judgment,  
 I will render vengeance to My enemies,  
 And repay those who hate Me.

<sup>42</sup>       I will make My arrows drunk with blood,  
 And My sword shall devour flesh,  
 With the blood of the slain and the captives,  
 From the heads of the leaders of the enemy.”’

<sup>43</sup>       “Rejoice, O Gentiles, *with His people;*  
 For He will avenge the blood of His servants,  
 And render vengeance to His adversaries;  
 He will provide atonement for His land *and His people.*”<sup>43</sup>

### Job 1:1-28 -

#### Chapter 1

<sup>1</sup>There was a man in the land of Uz, whose name *was* Job; and that man was blameless and upright, and one who feared God and shunned evil. <sup>2</sup>And seven sons and three daughters were born to him. <sup>3</sup>Also, his possessions were seven thousand sheep, three thousand camels, five hundred yoke of oxen, five hundred female donkeys, and a very large household, so that this man was the greatest of all the people of the East.

<sup>4</sup>And his sons would go and feast *in their* houses, each on his *appointed* day, and would send and invite their three sisters to eat and drink with them. <sup>5</sup>So it was, when the days of feasting had run their course, that Job would send and sanctify them, and he would rise early in the morning and offer burnt offerings *according to* the number of them all. For Job said, “It may be that my sons have sinned and cursed God in their hearts.” Thus Job did regularly.

---

<sup>42</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>43</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>6</sup>Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the LORD, and Satan also came among them. <sup>7</sup>And the LORD said to Satan, "From where do you come?" So Satan answered the LORD and said, "From going to and fro on the earth, and from walking back and forth on it." <sup>8</sup>Then the LORD said to Satan, "Have you considered My servant Job, that *there is* none like him on the earth, a blameless and upright man, one who fears God and shuns evil?" <sup>9</sup>So Satan answered the LORD and said, "Does Job fear God for nothing?" <sup>10</sup>"Have You not made a hedge around him, around his household, and around all that he has on every side? You have blessed the work of his hands, and his possessions have increased in the land. <sup>11</sup>"But now, stretch out Your hand and touch all that he has, and he will surely curse You to Your face!" <sup>12</sup>And the LORD said to Satan, "Behold, all that he has *is* in your power; only do not lay a hand on his *person*." So Satan went out from the presence of the LORD.

<sup>13</sup>Now there was a day when his sons and daughters *were* eating and drinking wine in their oldest brother's house; <sup>14</sup>and a messenger came to Job and said, "The oxen were plowing and the donkeys feeding beside them, <sup>15</sup>"when the Sabeans raided *them* and took them away—indeed they have killed the servants with the edge of the sword; and I alone have escaped to tell you!" <sup>16</sup>While he *was* still speaking, another also came and said, "The fire of God fell from heaven and burned up the sheep and the servants, and consumed them; and I alone have escaped to tell you!" <sup>17</sup>While he *was* still speaking, another also came and said, "The Chaldeans formed three bands, raided the camels and took them away, yes, and killed the servants with the edge of the sword; and I alone have escaped to tell you!" <sup>18</sup>While he *was* still speaking, another also came and said, "Your sons and daughters *were* eating and drinking wine in their oldest brother's house, <sup>19</sup>"and suddenly a great wind came from across the wilderness and struck the four corners of the house, and it fell on the young people, and they are dead; and I alone have escaped to tell you!"

<sup>20</sup>Then Job arose, tore his robe, and shaved his head; and he fell to the ground and worshiped. <sup>21</sup>And he said:

"Naked I came from my mother's womb,  
And naked shall I return there.  
The LORD gave, and the LORD has taken away;  
Blessed be the name of the LORD."

<sup>22</sup>In all this Job did not sin nor charge God with wrong.

## Chapter 2

<sup>1</sup>Again there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the LORD, and Satan came also among them to present himself before the LORD. <sup>2</sup>And the LORD said to Satan, "From where do you come?" So Satan answered the LORD and said, "From going to and fro on the earth, and from walking back and forth on it." <sup>3</sup>Then the LORD said to Satan, "Have you considered My servant Job, that *there is* none like him on the earth, a blameless and upright man, one who fears God and shuns evil? And still he holds fast to his integrity, although you incited Me against him, to destroy him without cause." <sup>4</sup>So Satan answered the LORD and said, "Skin for skin! Yes, all that a man has he will give for his life. <sup>5</sup>"But stretch out

**Your hand now, and touch his bone and his flesh, and he will surely curse You to Your face!”** <sup>6</sup>And the LORD said to Satan, “Behold, he *is* in your hand, but spare his life.”

<sup>7</sup>So Satan went out from the presence of the LORD, and struck Job with painful boils from the sole of his foot to the crown of his head. <sup>8</sup>And he took for himself a potsherd with which to scrape himself while he sat in the midst of the ashes.<sup>44</sup>

## Psalm Chapters 38-39 -

### Psalm 38

A Psalm of David. To bring to remembrance.

- <sup>1</sup>       **O LORD, do not rebuke me in Your wrath,  
Nor chasten me in Your hot displeasure!**
- <sup>2</sup>       **For Your arrows pierce me deeply,  
And Your hand presses me down.**
- <sup>3</sup>       *There is no soundness in my flesh  
Because of Your anger,  
Nor any health in my bones  
Because of my sin.*
- <sup>4</sup>       **For my iniquities have gone over my head;  
Like a heavy burden they are too heavy for me.**
- <sup>5</sup>       **My wounds are foul *and* festering  
Because of my foolishness.**
- <sup>6</sup>       **I am troubled, I am bowed down greatly;  
I go mourning all the day long.**
- <sup>7</sup>       **For my loins are full of inflammation,  
And *there is* no soundness in my flesh.**
- <sup>8</sup>       **I am feeble and severely broken;  
I groan because of the turmoil of my heart.**
- <sup>9</sup>       **Lord, all my desire *is* before You;  
And my sighing is not hidden from You.**
- <sup>10</sup>       **My heart pants, my strength fails me;  
As for the light of my eyes, it also has gone from me.**
- <sup>11</sup>       **My loved ones and my friends stand aloof from my plague,  
And my relatives stand afar off.**
- <sup>12</sup>       Those also who seek my life lay snares *for me*;  
Those who seek my hurt speak of destruction,  
And plan deception all the day long.
- <sup>13</sup>       But I, like a deaf *man*, do not hear;  
And *I am* like a mute *who* does not open his mouth.
- <sup>14</sup>       Thus I am like a man who does not hear,  
And in whose mouth *is* no response.
- <sup>15</sup>       For in You, O LORD, I hope;

---

<sup>44</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

You will hear, O Lord my God.  
 16 For I said, "*Hear me*, lest they rejoice over me,  
 Lest, when my foot slips, they exalt *themselves* against me."  
 17 For I *am* ready to fall,  
 And my sorrow *is* continually before me.  
 18 For I will declare my iniquity;  
 I will be in anguish over my sin.  
 19 But my enemies *are* vigorous, *and* they are strong;  
 And those who hate me wrongfully have multiplied.  
 20 Those also who render evil for good,  
 They are my adversaries, because I follow *what is* good.  
 21 Do not forsake me, O LORD;  
 O my God, be not far from me!  
 22 Make haste to help me,  
 O Lord, my salvation!

### Psalm 39

To the Chief Musician. To Jeduthun. A Psalm of David.

1 I said, "I will guard my ways,  
 Lest I sin with my tongue;  
 I will restrain my mouth with a muzzle,  
 While the wicked are before me."  
 2 I was mute with silence,  
 I held my peace *even* from good;  
 And my sorrow was stirred up.  
 3 My heart was hot within me;  
 While I was musing, the fire burned.  
*Then* I spoke with my tongue:  
 4 "LORD, make me to know my end,  
 And what *is* the measure of my days,  
*That* I may know how frail I *am*.  
 5 Indeed, You have made my days *as* handbreadths,  
 And my age *is* as nothing before You;  
 Certainly every man at his best state *is* but vapor. Selah  
 6 Surely every man walks about like a shadow;  
 Surely they busy themselves in vain;  
 He heaps up *riches*,  
 And does not know who will gather them.  
 7 "And now, Lord, what do I wait for?  
 My hope *is* in You.  
 8 Deliver me from all my transgressions;  
 Do not make me the reproach of the foolish.  
 9 **I was mute, I did not open my mouth,**  
**Because it was You who did *it*.**  
 10 **Remove Your plague from me;**  
**I am consumed by the blow of Your hand.**



11       **When with rebukes You correct man for iniquity,  
You make his beauty melt away like a moth;  
Surely every man *is* vapor. Selah**  
12       “Hear my prayer, O LORD,  
And give ear to my cry;  
Do not be silent at my tears;  
For I *am* a stranger with You,  
A sojourner, as all my fathers *were*.  
13       Remove Your gaze from me, that I may regain strength,  
Before I go away and am no more.”<sup>45</sup>

## Psalm Chapter 49 -

### Psalm 49

To the Chief Musician. A Psalm of the sons of Korah.

1       **Hear this, all peoples;  
Give ear, all inhabitants of the world,  
2       Both low and high,  
Rich and poor together.  
3       My mouth shall speak wisdom,  
And the meditation of my heart *shall give* understanding.  
4       I will incline my ear to a proverb;  
I will disclose my dark saying on the harp.  
5       Why should I fear in the days of evil,  
*When* the iniquity at my heels surrounds me?  
6       Those who trust in their wealth  
And boast in the multitude of their riches,  
7       None *of them* can by any means redeem *his* brother,  
Nor give to God a ransom for him—  
8       For the redemption of their souls *is* costly,  
And it shall cease forever—  
9       That he should continue to live eternally,  
*And not see the Pit.*  
10       For he sees wise men die;  
Likewise the fool and the senseless person perish,  
And leave their wealth to others.  
11       Their inner thought *is that* their houses *will last* forever,  
Their dwelling places to all generations;  
They call *their* lands after their own names.  
12       Nevertheless man, *though* in honor, does not remain;  
He is like the beasts *that* perish.  
13       This is the way of those who *are* foolish,  
And of their posterity who approve their sayings. Selah**

---

<sup>45</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

14 Like sheep they are laid in the grave;  
 Death shall feed on them;  
 The upright shall have dominion over them in the morning;  
 And their beauty shall be consumed in the grave, far from their dwelling.  
 15 But God will redeem my soul from the power of the grave,  
 For He shall receive me. Selah  
 16 **Do not be afraid when one becomes rich,**  
**When the glory of his house is increased;**  
 17 **For when he dies he shall carry nothing away;**  
**His glory shall not descend after him.**  
 18 **Though while he lives he blesses himself**  
**(For *men* will praise you when you do well for yourself),**  
 19 **He shall go to the generation of his fathers;**  
**They shall never see light.**  
 20 **A man *who is* in honor, yet does not understand,**  
**Is like the beasts *that* perish.<sup>46</sup>**

## Psalm Chapter 51 -

### Psalm 51

To the Chief Musician. A Psalm of David when Nathan the prophet went to him, after he had gone in to Bathsheba.

1 **Have mercy upon me, O God,**  
**According to Your lovingkindness;**  
**According to the multitude of Your tender mercies,**  
**Blot out my transgressions.**  
 2 **Wash me thoroughly from my iniquity,**  
**And cleanse me from my sin.**  
 3 **For I acknowledge my transgressions,**  
**And my sin *is* always before me.**  
 4 **Against You, You only, have I sinned,**  
**And done *this* evil in Your sight—**  
**That You may be found just when You speak,**  
***And* blameless when You judge.**  
 5 **Behold, I was brought forth in iniquity,**  
**And in sin my mother conceived me.**  
 6 **Behold, You desire truth in the inward parts,**  
**And in the hidden *part* You will make me to know wisdom.**  
 7 **Purge me with hyssop, and I shall be clean;**  
**Wash me, and I shall be whiter than snow.**  
 8 **Make me hear joy and gladness,**  
***That* the bones You have broken may rejoice.**  
 9 **Hide Your face from my sins,**

---

<sup>46</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

**And blot out all my iniquities.**  
 10       **Create in me a clean heart, O God,**  
           **And renew a steadfast spirit within me.**  
 11       **Do not cast me away from Your presence,**  
           **And do not take Your Holy Spirit from me.**  
 12       **Restore to me the joy of Your salvation,**  
           **And uphold me *by Your* generous Spirit.**  
 13       **Then I will teach transgressors Your ways,**  
           **And sinners shall be converted to You.**  
 14       Deliver me from the guilt of bloodshed, O God,  
           The God of my salvation,  
           *And* my tongue shall sing aloud of Your righteousness.  
 15       O Lord, open my lips,  
           And my mouth shall show forth Your praise.  
 16       For You do not desire sacrifice, or else I would give *it*;  
           You do not delight in burnt offering.  
 17       **The sacrifices of God *are* a broken spirit,**  
           **A broken and a contrite heart—**  
           **These, O God, You will not despise.**  
 18       Do good in Your good pleasure to Zion;  
           Build the walls of Jerusalem.  
 19       Then You shall be pleased with the sacrifices of righteousness,  
           With burnt offering and whole burnt offering;  
 Then they shall offer bulls on Your altar.<sup>47</sup>

### Proverbs 11:4 -

<sup>4</sup> **Riches won't help on the day of judgment**, but right living is a safeguard against death.<sup>48</sup>

### Proverbs Chapters 15-16 -

#### Chapter 15

1       **A soft answer turns away wrath,**  
           **But a harsh word stirs up anger.**  
 2       **The tongue of the wise uses knowledge rightly,**  
           **But the mouth of fools pours forth foolishness.**  
 3       **The eyes of the LORD *are* in every place,**  
           **Keeping watch on the evil and the good.**  
 4       **A wholesome tongue *is* a tree of life,**  
           **But perverseness in it breaks the spirit.**

---

<sup>47</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>48</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

5       **A fool despises his father's instruction,**  
6       **But he who receives correction is prudent.**  
7       ***In* the house of the righteous *there is* much treasure,**  
8       **But in the revenue of the wicked is trouble.**  
9       **The lips of the wise disperse knowledge,**  
10       **But the heart of the fool *does not do so.***  
11       **The sacrifice of the wicked *is* an abomination to the LORD,**  
12       **But the prayer of the upright *is* His delight.**  
13       **The way of the wicked *is* an abomination to the LORD,**  
14       **But He loves him who follows righteousness.**  
15       Harsh discipline *is* for him who forsakes the way,  
16       *And* he who hates correction will die.  
17       Hell and Destruction *are* before the LORD;  
18       So how much more the hearts of the sons of men.  
19       A scoffer does not love one who corrects him,  
20       Nor will he go to the wise.  
21       A merry heart makes a cheerful countenance,  
22       But by sorrow of the heart the spirit is broken.  
23       **The heart of him who has understanding seeks knowledge,**  
24       **But the mouth of fools feeds on foolishness.**  
25       **All the days of the afflicted *are* evil,**  
26       **But he who is of a merry heart *has* a continual feast.**  
27       **Better *is* a little with the fear of the LORD,**  
28       **Than great treasure with trouble.**  
29       **Better *is* a dinner of herbs where love is,**  
30       **Than a fatted calf with hatred.**  
31       **A wrathful man stirs up strife,**  
32       **But *he who is* slow to anger allays contention.**  
33       The way of the lazy *man is* like a hedge of thorns,  
34       But the way of the upright *is* a highway.  
35       A wise son makes a father glad,  
36       But a foolish man despises his mother.  
37       Folly *is* joy to him who is destitute of discernment,  
38       But a man of understanding walks uprightly.  
39       Without counsel, plans go awry,  
40       But in the multitude of counselors they are established.  
41       A man has joy by the answer of his mouth,  
42       And a word *spoken* in due season, how good *it is!*  
43       The way of life *winds* upward for the wise,  
44       That he may turn away from hell below.  
45       **The LORD will destroy the house of the proud,**  
46       **But He will establish the boundary of the widow.**  
47       **The thoughts of the wicked *are* an abomination to the LORD,**  
48       **But *the words* of the pure *are* pleasant.**  
49       **He who is greedy for gain troubles his own house,**  
50       **But he who hates bribes will live.**

28       **The heart of the righteous studies how to answer,**  
29       **But the mouth of the wicked pours forth evil.**  
30       **The LORD is far from the wicked,**  
31       **But He hears the prayer of the righteous.**  
32       The light of the eyes rejoices the heart,  
33       *And* a good report makes the bones healthy.  
34       The ear that hears the rebukes of life  
35       Will abide among the wise.  
36       He who disdains instruction despises his own soul,  
37       But he who heeds rebuke gets understanding.  
38       **The fear of the LORD is the instruction of wisdom,**  
39       **And before honor is humility.**

## Chapter 16

1       The preparations of the heart *belong* to man,  
2       But the answer of the tongue *is* from the LORD.  
3       **All the ways of a man are pure in his own eyes,**  
4       **But the LORD weighs the spirits.**  
5       **Commit your works to the LORD,**  
6       **And your thoughts will be established.**  
7       **The LORD has made all for Himself,**  
8       **Yes, even the wicked for the day of doom.**  
9       **Everyone proud in heart is an abomination to the LORD;**  
10       **Though they join forces, none will go unpunished.**  
11       **In mercy and truth**  
12       **Atonement is provided for iniquity;**  
13       **And by the fear of the LORD one departs from evil.**  
14       **When a man's ways please the LORD,**  
15       **He makes even his enemies to be at peace with him.**  
16       **Better is a little with righteousness,**  
17       **Than vast revenues without justice.**  
18       **A man's heart plans his way,**  
19       **But the LORD directs his steps.**  
20       Divination *is* on the lips of the king;  
21       His mouth must not transgress in judgment.  
22       Honest weights and scales *are* the LORD's;  
23       All the weights in the bag *are* His work.  
24       *It is* an abomination for kings to commit wickedness,  
25       For a throne is established by righteousness.  
26       Righteous lips *are* the delight of kings,  
27       And they love him who speaks *what is* right.  
28       As messengers of death *is* the king's wrath,  
29       But a wise man will appease it.  
30       In the light of the king's face *is* life,  
31       And his favor *is* like a cloud of the latter rain.

16       **How much better to get wisdom than gold!**  
 And to get understanding is to be chosen rather than silver.  
 17       **The highway of the upright *is* to depart from evil;**  
**He who keeps his way preserves his soul.**  
 18       **Pride *goes* before destruction,**  
**And a haughty spirit before a fall.**  
 19       **Better *to be* of a humble spirit with the lowly,**  
**Than to divide the spoil with the proud.**  
 20       **He who heeds the word wisely will find good,**  
**And whoever trusts in the LORD, happy *is* he.**  
 21       **The wise in heart will be called prudent,**  
**And sweetness of the lips increases learning.**  
 22       **Understanding *is* a wellspring of life to him who has it.**  
**But the correction of fools *is* folly.**  
 23       **The heart of the wise teaches his mouth,**  
**And adds learning to his lips.**  
 24       **Pleasant words *are like* a honeycomb,**  
**Sweetness to the soul and health to the bones.**  
 25       **There is a way *that seems* right to a man,**  
**But its end *is* the way of death.**  
 26       The person who labors, labors for himself,  
 For his *hungry* mouth drives him *on*.  
 27       An ungodly man digs up evil,  
 And *it is* on his lips like a burning fire.  
 28       A perverse man sows strife,  
 And a whisperer separates the best of friends.  
 29       A violent man entices his neighbor,  
 And leads him in a way *that is* not good.  
 30       He winks his eye to devise perverse things;  
 He purses his lips *and* brings about evil.  
 31       **The silver-haired head *is* a crown of glory,**  
***If* it is found in the way of righteousness.**  
 32       ***He who is* slow to anger *is* better than the mighty,**  
**And he who rules his spirit than he who takes a city.**  
 33       **The lot is cast into the lap,**  
**But its every decision *is* from the LORD.<sup>49</sup>**

**Isaiah 66:1-2 -**

**66** Heaven is my throne and the earth is my footstool: What Temple can you build for me as good as that? <sup>2</sup>My hand has made both earth and skies, and they are mine. **Yet I**

---

<sup>49</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

**will look with pity on the man who has a humble and a contrite heart, who trembles at my word.<sup>50</sup>**

**Luke 22:31-34 -**

<sup>31</sup>And the Lord said, **“Simon, Simon! Indeed, Satan has asked for you, that he may sift you as wheat.”** <sup>32</sup>“But I have prayed for you, that your faith should not fail; and when you have returned to Me, strengthen your brethren.” <sup>33</sup>But he said to Him, “Lord, I am ready to go with You, both to prison and to death.” <sup>34</sup>Then He said, **“I tell you, Peter, the rooster shall not crow this day before you will deny three times that you know Me.”**<sup>51</sup>

**I Timothy Chapter 6 -**

**Chapter 6**

<sup>1</sup>Let as many bondservants as are under the yoke count their own masters worthy of all honor, so that the name of God and *His* doctrine may not be blasphemed. <sup>2</sup>And those who have believing masters, let them not despise *them* because they are brethren, but rather serve *them* because those who are benefited are believers and beloved. Teach and exhort these things.

<sup>3</sup>**If anyone teaches otherwise and does not consent to wholesome words, *even* the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which accords with godliness, <sup>4</sup>he is proud, knowing nothing, but is obsessed with disputes and arguments over words, from which come envy, strife, reviling, evil suspicions, <sup>5</sup>useless wranglings of men of corrupt minds and destitute of the truth, who suppose that godliness is a *means of gain*. From such withdraw yourself. <sup>6</sup>Now godliness with contentment is great gain. <sup>7</sup>For we brought nothing into *this* world, *and it is* certain we can carry nothing out. <sup>8</sup>And having food and clothing, with these we shall be content. <sup>9</sup>But those who desire to be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and *into* many foolish and harmful lusts which drown men in destruction and perdition. <sup>10</sup>For the love of money is a root of all *kinds of* evil, for which some have strayed from the faith in their greediness, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.**

<sup>11</sup>**But you, O man of God, flee these things and pursue righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, gentleness. <sup>12</sup>Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, to which you were also called and have confessed the good confession in the presence of many witnesses. <sup>13</sup>I urge you in the sight of God who gives life to all things, and *before* Christ Jesus who witnessed the good confession before Pontius Pilate, <sup>14</sup>that you keep *this* commandment without spot, blameless until our Lord Jesus Christ's appearing, <sup>15</sup>which He will manifest in His own time, *He who is* the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings and Lord of lords, <sup>16</sup>who alone has immortality, dwelling in unapproachable light, whom no man has seen or can see, to whom *be* honor and everlasting power. Amen.**

---

<sup>50</sup>*The Living Bible*, (Wheaton, Ill.: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1997.

<sup>51</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>17</sup>**Command those who are rich in this present age not to be haughty, nor to trust in uncertain riches but in the living God, who gives us richly all things to enjoy.**  
<sup>18</sup>**Let them do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to give, willing to share,**  
<sup>19</sup>**storing up for themselves a good foundation for the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternal life.**

<sup>20</sup>O Timothy! Guard what was committed to your trust, avoiding the profane *and* idle babblings and contradictions of what is falsely called knowledge— <sup>21</sup>by professing it some have strayed concerning the faith. Grace *be* with you. Amen.<sup>52</sup>

### **Sirach 10:6-18 -**

#### *The Sin of Pride*

<sup>6</sup>Do not get angry with your neighbor for every injury,  
and do not resort to acts of insolence.  
<sup>7</sup>Arrogance is hateful to the Lord and to mortals,  
and injustice is outrageous to both.  
<sup>8</sup>Sovereignty passes from nation to nation  
on account of injustice and insolence and wealth.  
<sup>9</sup>How can dust and ashes be proud?  
Even in life the human body decays.  
<sup>10</sup>A long illness baffles the physician;  
the king of today will die tomorrow.  
<sup>11</sup>For when one is dead  
he inherits maggots and vermin and worms.  
<sup>12</sup>**The beginning of human pride is to forsake the Lord;  
the heart has withdrawn from its Maker.**  
<sup>13</sup>**For the beginning of pride is sin,  
and the one who clings to it pours out abominations.  
Therefore the Lord brings upon them unheard-of calamities,  
and destroys them completely.**  
<sup>14</sup>**The Lord overthrows the thrones of rulers,  
and enthrones the lowly in their place.**  
<sup>15</sup>**The Lord plucks up the roots of the nations,  
and plants the humble in their place.**  
<sup>16</sup>The Lord lays waste the lands of the nations,  
and destroys them to the foundations of the earth.  
<sup>17</sup>He removes some of them and destroys them,  
and erases the memory of them from the earth.  
<sup>18</sup>**Pride was not created for human beings,  
or violent anger for those born of women.**<sup>53</sup>

*Though we will speak specifically about money issues later, it is the desire for wealth that causes many problems in the lives of people who walk according to the flesh. **Since the***

<sup>52</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>53</sup>*The New Revised Standard Version*, (Nashville, TN: Thomas Nelson Publishers) 1989.



*fall of Adam, people have had the desire to control the wealth of the world. The competitive attitude that drives people to want this control is rooted in the pride of ownership. This is idolatry and an abomination to God. It is this prideful desire to control things, which entered into Lucifer's heart that led him into sin and it is the number one thing that God wants to see that we have overcome BEFORE He will grant us eternal life. This is one of the main reasons that God created the system of commerce, to see if we could overcome the 'pride of ownership'. Nothing on this planet truly belongs to us. We are merely 'stewards' of God's property. If we can humbly understand this concept, then it is not that hard to give something away when God tells us to do so.*

*People mistakenly believe that if they have more money, then they will be happier. They believe that wealth and the pleasures that they can purchase with it will fill the void that they feel in their hearts. **However, God created the void in our hearts that can only be filled by having a true, loving relationship with Him and other Godly people. This is the message of the cross - love God with all your being, (vertical component) and love your neighbor as yourself, (horizontal component).** There is no support for the horizontal component without the vertical component. We cannot love other human beings if we have not first learned humility, the fear of the Lord and to honor, respect and obey Him, (which is how we show our love for God). Apart from Jesus, we can do nothing; especially show true Godly love for one another. Therefore, it is a lesson in futility to chase after material wealth to try to fill the need for love.*

*It is the misguided search for love and personal satisfaction that drives people to operate in the 'works of the flesh'. The pleasure seeking that results in these 'works' is also rooted in the pride of self-gratification. This addictive, self-destructive behaviour manifests with anything that will give the person the next 'buzz' or 'rush'. Self-gratification is the root of addiction, whether it is an addiction to sex, drugs, risky behaviour, gambling or even the anointing from the power of the Holy Spirit. The latter situation is where 'Christians' go from 'revival' to 'revival' and one Christian meeting to another in order to feel the 'anointing' from the presence of God. I term these people 'anointing junkies'. This behavior is rampant in the 'Spirit-filled' churches worldwide. These people never really grow up in Christ; they just keep going from one Holy Spirit 'high' to another. They are modern 'Israelites' wandering in the 'spiritual wilderness'. They stay sick and financially challenged. They are forever chasing God and learning, but never really coming to the knowledge of the truth. This is also a sign that we are living in the end-times. People, including many Christians, believe that with wealth, power and control they can achieve a sense of satisfaction through self-gratification. However, this will only lead into a cycle of wanting more and more, as self-gratification will never truly bring satisfaction because it is the opposite of love. **True, Godly love is expressed in giving, caring for and serving others. The 'flesh' always operates in selfish pride which leads to death and destruction and the 'spirit' always operates in selfless humility which leads to life.***

*People also incorrectly believe that with wealth comes power, which in a natural sense is true. Having money does allow one to have more 'power' in the earthly realm. However,*

*TRUE power will come only from God and is spiritual in nature. With the power of the Holy Spirit that comes from believing in and obeying God through Jesus Christ, true Christians can get material wealth as they need it. However, true Christians will not really care about this wealth in the natural sense. They will only desire to have it as a means to an end, in order to spread the gospel of Jesus Christ into the earth as God has commanded. This Spiritual power will also give them protection from harm and allow them to heal the sick and do other miracles as confirmation of the Word that they preach, (see Deuteronomy 8:18, Proverbs 16:18, Isaiah 14:12-15, Ezekiel 28:14-16, John 15:13, Galatians 5:17-21 above, Mark 16:14-20 and II Timothy chapter 3).*

### **Mark 16:14-20 -**

<sup>14</sup>Later He appeared to the eleven as they sat at the table; and He rebuked their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they did not believe those who had seen Him after He had risen. <sup>15</sup>And He said to them, **“Go into all the world and preach the gospel to every creature.** <sup>16</sup>“**He who believes and is baptized will be saved; but he who does not believe will be condemned.** <sup>17</sup>“**And these signs will follow those who believe: In My name they will cast out demons; they will speak with new tongues; <sup>18</sup>“they will take up serpents; and if they drink anything deadly, it will by no means hurt them; they will lay hands on the sick, and they will recover.”**

<sup>19</sup>So then, after the Lord had spoken to them, He was received up into heaven, and sat down at the right hand of God. <sup>20</sup>And they went out and preached everywhere, the Lord working with *them* and confirming the word through the accompanying signs. Amen.<sup>54</sup>

### **II Timothy Chapter 3 -**

#### **Chapter 3**

<sup>1</sup>But know this, that in the last days perilous times will come: <sup>2</sup>For men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, <sup>3</sup>unloving, unforgiving, slanderers, without self-control, brutal, despisers of good, <sup>4</sup>traitors, headstrong, haughty, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God, <sup>5</sup>having a form of godliness but denying its power. And from such people turn away! <sup>6</sup>For of this sort are those who creep into households and make captives of gullible women loaded down with sins, led away by various lusts, <sup>7</sup>always learning and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth. <sup>8</sup>Now as Jannes and Jambres resisted Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt minds, disapproved concerning the faith; <sup>9</sup>but they will progress no further, for their folly will be manifest to all, as theirs also was.

<sup>10</sup>But you have carefully followed my doctrine, manner of life, purpose, faith, longsuffering, love, perseverance, <sup>11</sup>persecutions, afflictions, which happened to me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra—what persecutions I endured. And out of *them* all the Lord delivered me. <sup>12</sup>Yes, and all who desire to live godly in Christ Jesus will suffer

---

<sup>54</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

persecution. <sup>13</sup>But evil men and impostors will grow worse and worse, deceiving and being deceived. <sup>14</sup>But you must continue in the things which you have learned and been assured of, knowing from whom you have learned *them*, <sup>15</sup>and that from childhood you have known the Holy Scriptures, which are able to make you wise for salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus. <sup>16</sup>All Scripture *is* given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, <sup>17</sup>that the man of God may be complete, thoroughly equipped for every good work.<sup>55</sup>

*Down through the ages people have been driven by the competitive attitude of wanting to control the wealth of the world. They have succumbed to the desire to have more and more of this wealth and the earthly power that comes with it. By controlling the wealth of the world people believe that they can control their destiny. However, God wants us to become like little children in our reliance on Him for provision, since this shows our faith in Him. If ungodly people come up short of what they think they should have or if anyone attempts to inhibit their move to control wealth, it often makes these greedy, power-hungry people angry. This anger may lead to actions with dire consequences. **Unbridled anger stemming from the evil desire to control the wealth and people of the world often leads to theft, emotional and physical assault, as well as murder.** The greater the numbers of people under the control of those who seek to have more wealth, the greater the number of people who will suffer and die needlessly as a result of these people seeking to become wealthier and more powerful. This is why Cain killed Able. Murdering someone is both a sin a crime and is the end result of uncontrolled anger. With the power of the Holy Spirit through Christ, we will have self control and will be able to control our anger. Also, when people who may not have a particular desire to control wealth but do have the desire to control the lives of other people act on those evil, prideful desires, this too may lead these people to perpetrate acts of anger and violence. **Jesus instructed us that not only was murder wrong but that we should not get angry enough to even have the desire to murder someone.** Therefore, it is the evil desire for power and control that must be dealt with in order to overcome the resultant actions of abuse and violence that stem from them. The process of human sin begins with an evil thought that a person does not deal with. Eventually they act on the thought and sin becomes full fledged. This will lead to physical death and even eternal death if the person does not repent through Jesus. Thus, evil thoughts need to be bound and cast down in the name of Jesus when they come into the person's head. Otherwise they risk the thought coming to fruition as sin leading to death.*

*The only difference between people who commit violent crime directly against another person and those in positions of power who orchestrate mass acts of such violence in the name of some 'greater good', is how the crime is perpetrated. There is NO difference in the attitude of the heart of the individuals. Both types of people will have their special place in hell and ultimately will be forever destroyed in the lake of fire. The same is true for anyone who willfully sins and commits crime of any kind, even if they call themselves Christian. It is imperative that we not even keep company with those who operate in the*

---

<sup>55</sup>The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

*evil pride of lust for power and control, especially if they claim to be Christian. For true Christians it is the issue of the heart that God is really interested in addressing in our lives. **Christians must submit to God through Christ in such a way so as to eliminate the competitive desire for control of the things and people of this world.** Therefore, we must learn to trust only in and to rely totally upon God through Christ for everything. We should NEVER overcome someone else's free will to choose. Overcoming another person's free will is witchcraft. If we seek God's kingdom first and become truly obedient to Him, (i.e., be righteous) then we will have all the earthly provision that we need and we will be well taken care of for eternity. God Himself will deal with those who come against us as we work for Him, (see Genesis 4:1-15, Proverbs 22:24-25, 24:1-2, Matthew 5:21-26, chapter 6, 18:1-5, I Corinthians 5:9-13, II Corinthians 10:3-6, Philippians 4:6-7, Hebrews 6:1-12, 10:19-39, James 1:12-27 and chapter 4).*

### **Genesis 4:1-15 -**

<sup>1</sup>Now Adam knew Eve his wife, and she conceived and bore Cain, and said, "I have acquired a man from the LORD." <sup>2</sup>Then she bore again, this time his brother Abel. Now Abel was a keeper of sheep, but Cain was a tiller of the ground. <sup>3</sup>And in the process of time it came to pass that Cain brought an offering of the fruit of the ground to the LORD. <sup>4</sup>Abel also brought of the firstborn of his flock and of their fat. And the LORD respected Abel and his offering, <sup>5</sup>but He did not respect Cain and his offering. And Cain was very angry, and his countenance fell. <sup>6</sup>So the LORD said to Cain, "Why are you angry? And why has your countenance fallen?" <sup>7</sup>"If you do well, will you not be accepted? And if you do not do well, sin lies at the door. And its desire *is* for you, but you should rule over it." <sup>8</sup>Now Cain talked with Abel his brother; and it came to pass, when they were in the field, that Cain rose up against Abel his brother and killed him.

<sup>9</sup>Then the LORD said to Cain, "Where *is* Abel your brother?" He said, "I do not know. Am I my brother's keeper?" <sup>10</sup>**And He said, "What have you done? The voice of your brother's blood cries out to Me from the ground.** <sup>11</sup>**"So now you *are* cursed from the earth, which has opened its mouth to receive your brother's blood from your hand.** <sup>12</sup>"When you till the ground, it shall no longer yield its strength to you. A fugitive and a vagabond you shall be on the earth." <sup>13</sup>And Cain said to the LORD, "My punishment *is* greater than I can bear!" <sup>14</sup>"Surely You have driven me out this day from the face of the ground; I shall be hidden from Your face; I shall be a fugitive and a vagabond on the earth, and it will happen *that* anyone who finds me will kill me." <sup>15</sup>**And the LORD said to him, "Therefore, whoever kills Cain, vengeance shall be taken on him sevenfold." And the LORD set a mark on Cain, lest anyone finding him should kill him.**<sup>56</sup>

### **Proverbs 22:24-25 -**

<sup>24</sup> Make no friendship with an angry man,  
And with a furious man do not go,  
<sup>25</sup> Lest you learn his ways

And set a snare for your soul.<sup>57</sup>

### Proverbs 24:1-2 -

**24** Don't envy evil people; don't desire their company. <sup>2</sup> For they spend their days plotting violence, and their words are always stirring up trouble.<sup>58</sup>

### Matthew 5:21-26 -

<sup>21</sup>“You have heard that it was said to those of old, ‘You shall not murder, and whoever murders will be in danger of the judgment.’ <sup>22</sup>“But I say to you that whoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment. And whoever says to his brother, ‘Raca!’ shall be in danger of the council. But whoever says, ‘You fool!’ shall be in danger of hell fire. <sup>23</sup>“Therefore if you bring your gift to the altar, and there remember that your brother has something against you, <sup>24</sup>“leave your gift there before the altar, and go your way. First be reconciled to your brother, and then come and offer your gift. <sup>25</sup>“Agree with your adversary quickly, while you are on the way with him, lest your adversary deliver you to the judge, the judge hand you over to the officer, and you be thrown into prison. <sup>26</sup>“Assuredly, I say to you, you will by no means get out of there till you have paid the last penny.<sup>59</sup>

### Matthew Chapter 6 -

#### Chapter 6

<sup>1</sup>“Take heed that you do not do your charitable deeds before men, to be seen by them. Otherwise you have no reward from your Father in heaven. <sup>2</sup>“Therefore, when you do a charitable deed, do not sound a trumpet before you as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory from men. Assuredly, I say to you, they have their reward. <sup>3</sup>“But when you do a charitable deed, do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing, <sup>4</sup>“that your charitable deed may be in secret; and your Father who sees in secret will Himself reward you openly.

<sup>5</sup>“And when you pray, you shall not be like the hypocrites. For they love to pray standing in the synagogues and on the corners of the streets, that they may be seen by men. Assuredly, I say to you, they have their reward. <sup>6</sup>“But you, when you pray, go into your room, and when you have shut your door, pray to your Father who *is* in the secret *place*; and your Father who sees in secret will reward you openly. <sup>7</sup>“And when you pray, do not use vain repetitions as the heathen *do*. For they think that they will be heard for their many words. <sup>8</sup>“Therefore do not be like them. For your Father knows the things you have need of before you ask Him. <sup>9</sup>“In this manner, therefore, pray:

---

<sup>57</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>58</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>59</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

Our Father in heaven,  
Hallowed be Your name.  
10 Your kingdom come.  
Your will be done  
On earth as *it is* in heaven.  
11 Give us this day our daily bread.  
12 And forgive us our debts,  
As we forgive our debtors.  
13 And do not lead us into temptation,  
But deliver us from the evil one.  
For Yours is the kingdom and the power and the glory forever. Amen.

<sup>14</sup>“For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you.  
<sup>15</sup>“But if you do not forgive men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

<sup>16</sup>“Moreover, when you fast, do not be like the hypocrites, with a sad countenance. For they disfigure their faces that they may appear to men to be fasting. Assuredly, I say to you, they have their reward. <sup>17</sup>“But you, when you fast, anoint your head and wash your face, <sup>18</sup>“so that you do not appear to men to be fasting, but to your Father who *is* in the secret *place*; and your Father who sees in secret will reward you openly.

<sup>19</sup>“Do not lay up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust destroy and where thieves break in and steal; <sup>20</sup>“but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust destroys and where thieves do not break in and steal. <sup>21</sup>“For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also.

<sup>22</sup>“The lamp of the body is the eye. If therefore your eye is good, your whole body will be full of light. <sup>23</sup>“But if your eye is bad, your whole body will be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in you is darkness, how great *is* that darkness!

<sup>24</sup>“**No one can serve two masters; for either he will hate the one and love the other, or else he will be loyal to the one and despise the other. You cannot serve God and mammon.**

<sup>25</sup>“**Therefore I say to you, do not worry about your life, what you will eat or what you will drink; nor about your body, what you will put on. Is not life more than food and the body more than clothing?** <sup>26</sup>“Look at the birds of the air, for they neither sow nor reap nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not of more value than they? <sup>27</sup>“Which of you by worrying can add one cubit to his stature? <sup>28</sup>“So why do you worry about clothing? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow: they neither toil nor spin; <sup>29</sup>“and yet I say to you that even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. <sup>30</sup>“Now if God so clothes the grass of the field, which today is, and tomorrow is thrown into the oven, *will He* not much more *clothe* you, O you of little faith? <sup>31</sup>“**Therefore do not worry, saying, ‘What shall we eat?’ or ‘What shall we drink?’ or ‘What shall we wear?’** <sup>32</sup>“**For after all these things the Gentiles seek. For your heavenly Father knows that you need all these things.** <sup>33</sup>“**But seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added to you.**

**<sup>34</sup>“Therefore do not worry about tomorrow, for tomorrow will worry about its own things. Sufficient for the day is its own trouble.”<sup>60</sup>**

### **Matthew 18:1-5 -**

<sup>1</sup>At that time the disciples came to Jesus, saying, “Who then is greatest in the kingdom of heaven?” <sup>2</sup>Then Jesus called a little child to Him, set him in the midst of them, <sup>3</sup>and said, **“Assuredly, I say to you, unless you are converted and become as little children, you will by no means enter the kingdom of heaven.”** <sup>4</sup>“Therefore whoever humbles himself as this little child is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven.” <sup>5</sup>“Whoever receives one little child like this in My name receives Me.”<sup>61</sup>

### **I Corinthians 5:9-13 -**

<sup>9</sup>I wrote to you in my epistle not to keep company with sexually immoral people. <sup>10</sup>Yet *I* certainly *did* not *mean* with the sexually immoral people of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or idolaters, since then you would need to go out of the world. <sup>11</sup>**But now I have written to you not to keep company with anyone named a brother, who is sexually immoral, or covetous, or an idolater, or a reviler, or a drunkard, or an extortioner—not even to eat with such a person.** <sup>12</sup>For what *have I to do* with judging those also who are outside? Do you not judge those who are inside? <sup>13</sup>But those who are outside God judges. Therefore “put away from yourselves the evil person.”<sup>62</sup>

### **II Corinthians 10:3-6 -**

<sup>3</sup>For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war according to the flesh. <sup>4</sup>**For the weapons of our warfare *are* not carnal but mighty in God for pulling down strongholds,** <sup>5</sup>**casting down arguments and every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God, bringing every thought into captivity to the obedience of Christ,** <sup>6</sup>**and being ready to punish all disobedience when your obedience is fulfilled.”<sup>63</sup>**

### **Philippians 4:6-7 -**

<sup>6</sup>**Don’t worry about anything; instead, pray about everything.** Tell God what you need, and thank him for all he has done. <sup>7</sup>If you do this, you will experience God’s peace,

---

<sup>60</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>61</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>62</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>63</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

which is far more wonderful than the human mind can understand. His peace will guard your hearts and minds as you live in Christ Jesus.<sup>64</sup>

### Hebrews 6:1-12 -

<sup>1</sup>Therefore, leaving the discussion of the elementary *principles* of Christ, let us go on to perfection, not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works and of faith toward God, <sup>2</sup>of the doctrine of baptisms, of laying on of hands, of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment. <sup>3</sup>And this we will do if God permits. **<sup>4</sup>For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted the heavenly gift, and have become partakers of the Holy Spirit, <sup>5</sup>and have tasted the good word of God and the powers of the age to come, <sup>6</sup>if they fall away, to renew them again to repentance, since they crucify again for themselves the Son of God, and put *Him* to an open shame. <sup>7</sup>For the earth which drinks in the rain that often comes upon it, and bears herbs useful for those by whom it is cultivated, receives blessing from God; <sup>8</sup>but if it bears thorns and briars, *it is rejected and near to being cursed, whose end is to be burned.***

<sup>9</sup>But, beloved, we are confident of better things concerning you, yes, things that accompany salvation, though we speak in this manner. <sup>10</sup>For God *is* not unjust to forget your work and labor of love which you have shown toward His name, *in that* you have ministered to the saints, and do minister. <sup>11</sup>And we desire that each one of you show the same diligence to the full assurance of hope until the end, <sup>12</sup>that you do not become sluggish, but imitate those who through faith and patience inherit the promises.<sup>65</sup>

### Hebrews 10:19-39 -

<sup>19</sup>Therefore, brethren, having boldness to enter the Holiest by the blood of Jesus, <sup>20</sup>by a new and living way which He consecrated for us, through the veil, that is, His flesh, <sup>21</sup>and *having* a High Priest over the house of God, <sup>22</sup>let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience and our bodies washed with pure water. <sup>23</sup>Let us hold fast the confession of *our* hope without wavering, for He who promised *is* faithful. <sup>24</sup>And let us consider one another in order to stir up love and good works, <sup>25</sup>not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as *is* the manner of some, but exhorting *one another*, and so much the more as you see the Day approaching.

**<sup>26</sup>For if we sin willfully after we have received the knowledge of the truth, there no longer remains a sacrifice for sins, <sup>27</sup>but a certain fearful expectation of judgment, and fiery indignation which will devour the adversaries. <sup>28</sup>Anyone who has rejected Moses' law dies without mercy on the testimony of two or three witnesses. <sup>29</sup>Of how much worse punishment, do you suppose, will he be thought worthy who has trampled the Son of God underfoot, counted the blood of the**

---

<sup>64</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>65</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.



**covenant by which he was sanctified a common thing, and insulted the Spirit of grace?** <sup>30</sup>For we know Him who said, “Vengeance is Mine, I will repay,” says the Lord. And again, “The LORD will judge His people.” <sup>31</sup>It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God. <sup>32</sup>But recall the former days in which, after you were illuminated, you endured a great struggle with sufferings: <sup>33</sup>partly while you were made a spectacle both by reproaches and tribulations, and partly while you became companions of those who were so treated; <sup>34</sup>for you had compassion on me in my chains, and joyfully accepted the plundering of your goods, knowing that you have a better and an enduring possession for yourselves in heaven. <sup>35</sup>Therefore do not cast away your confidence, which has great reward. <sup>36</sup>For you have need of endurance, so that after you have done the will of God, you may receive the promise:

<sup>37</sup> “For yet a little while,  
And He who is coming will come and will not tarry.  
<sup>38</sup> Now the just shall live by faith;  
But if *anyone* draws back,  
My soul has no pleasure in him.”

<sup>39</sup>But we are not of those who draw back to perdition, but of those who believe to the saving of the soul.<sup>66</sup>

#### **James 1:12-27 -**

<sup>12</sup>Blessed *is* the man who endures temptation; for when he has been approved, he will receive the crown of life which the Lord has promised to those who love Him. <sup>13</sup>Let no one say when he is tempted, “I am tempted by God”; for God cannot be tempted by evil, nor does He Himself tempt anyone. <sup>14</sup>**But each one is tempted when he is drawn away by his own desires and enticed.** <sup>15</sup>**Then, when desire has conceived, it gives birth to sin; and sin, when it is full-grown, brings forth death.** <sup>16</sup>Do not be deceived, my beloved brethren. <sup>17</sup>Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and comes down from the Father of lights, with whom there is no variation or shadow of turning. <sup>18</sup>Of His own will He brought us forth by the word of truth, that we might be a kind of firstfruits of His creatures.

<sup>19</sup>So then, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath; <sup>20</sup>for the wrath of man does not produce the righteousness of God.

<sup>21</sup>Therefore lay aside all filthiness and overflow of wickedness, and receive with meekness the implanted word, which is able to save your souls. <sup>22</sup>But be doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving yourselves. <sup>23</sup>For if anyone is a hearer of the word and not a doer, he is like a man observing his natural face in a mirror; <sup>24</sup>for he observes himself, goes away, and immediately forgets what kind of man he was. <sup>25</sup>But he who looks into the perfect law of liberty and continues *in it*, and is not a forgetful hearer but a doer of the work, this one will be blessed in what he does. <sup>26</sup>If anyone among you thinks he is religious, and does not bridle his tongue but deceives his own heart, this one’s

religion *is* useless. <sup>27</sup>Pure and undefiled religion before God and the Father is this: to visit orphans and widows in their trouble, *and* to keep oneself unspotted from the world.<sup>67</sup>

## James Chapter 4 -

### Chapter 4

<sup>1</sup>Where do wars and fights *come* from among you? Do *they* not *come* from your desires for pleasure that war in your members? <sup>2</sup>You lust and do not have. You murder and covet and cannot obtain. You fight and war. Yet you do not have because you do not ask. <sup>3</sup>You ask and do not receive, because you ask amiss, that you may spend *it* on your pleasures. <sup>4</sup>Adulterers and adulteresses! Do you not know that friendship with the world is enmity with God? Whoever therefore wants to be a friend of the world makes himself an enemy of God. <sup>5</sup>Or do you think that the Scripture says in vain, “The Spirit who dwells in us yearns jealously”? <sup>6</sup>But He gives more grace. Therefore He says:

**“God resists the proud,  
But gives grace to the humble.”**

<sup>7</sup>Therefore submit to God. Resist the devil and he will flee from you. <sup>8</sup>Draw near to God and He will draw near to you. Cleanse *your* hands, *you* sinners; and purify *your* hearts, *you* double-minded. <sup>9</sup>Lament and mourn and weep! Let your laughter be turned to mourning and *your* joy to gloom. <sup>10</sup>Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and He will lift you up.

another, brethren. He who speaks evil of a brother and judges his brother, speaks evil of the law and judges the law. But if you judge the law, you are not a doer of the law but a judge. <sup>12</sup>There is one Lawgiver, who is able to save and to destroy. Who are you to judge another?

<sup>13</sup>Come now, you who say, “Today or tomorrow we will go to such and such a city, spend a year there, buy and sell, and make a profit”; <sup>14</sup>whereas you do not know what *will* happen tomorrow. For what *is* your life? It is even a vapor that appears for a little time and then vanishes away. <sup>15</sup>Instead you *ought* to say, “If the Lord wills, we shall live and do this or that.” <sup>16</sup>But now you boast in your arrogance. All such boasting is evil. <sup>17</sup>Therefore, to him who knows to do good and does not do *it*, to him it is sin.<sup>68</sup>

*We see in God’s Word that sometimes He repays seven times for whatever someone does that is against Him and His ways, (see Genesis 4:15 above). Seven is God’s number of completeness. If God’s people choose the ways of Satan over the ways of God, then God punishes them severely in order to try to get them to turn back to Him. God also considers any kind of idolatry an abomination. **Choosing to operate in pride is considered the worst form of idolatry, as one then essentially worships themselves or the imaginations of their own minds rather than worshipping God.** This is what Lucifer*

---

<sup>67</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>68</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

*did when he rebelled against God. He lifted himself in his 'heart' or mind so that he considered himself above God and thus he sinned. Because of this 'idolatry' Lucifer was cast out of heaven permanently, doomed to end up in eternal torment in the lake of fire.*

*Humans must overcome the idolatry of pride in order to avoid ending up in the lake of fire as well. For us to be more like God, we must learn to be humble, repent, (i.e., express contrition) and forgive others. Offense is the 'bait of Satan' that he uses to divide Christians and humans in general. Jesus taught that in accordance to the 'seedtime and harvest principle', we must 'sow the seed' of forgiveness by forgiving other people, (even our enemies) in order for us to 'reap the harvest' of forgiveness from God. In fact, we must forgive our TRUE, obedient Christian brothers and sisters as many times as necessary. **Refusing to forgive is rooted in pride and is in direct disobedience to God's command through Jesus.** We all fall short of the mark and need to repent and be forgiven. We want to be forgiven, so likewise we must forgive others. In addition, we must forgive ourselves. Not forgiving ourselves is also pride. If we repent to God and expect Him to forgive us and forget about the sin, but we keep ruminating on it, then we are actually exalting ourselves above God by choosing not to forgive ourselves! Learning the humble act of forgiving and even treating our enemies with respect is critical for us to be able to become more like God. This is one of the ways that we will know that we have become perfected in Christ and can expect to avoid God's punishment, (see the teachings, 'The Power of Forgiveness', 'The Path to Perfection', Genesis 4:15, Matthew 6:12, Vv. 14-15, Revelation 20:10 above, Genesis 8:22, Leviticus chapter 26, Psalm 79:12, Proverbs 6:30-31, Matthew 5:43-48, 18:21-35, Luke 6:37, 17:1-4, John 14:15, Romans 3:10-26, Galatians 6:6-10 and I John 4:7-21).*

### **Genesis 8:22 -**

<sup>22</sup> "While the earth remains,  
**Seedtime and harvest,**  
 Cold and heat,  
 Winter and summer,  
 And day and night  
 Shall not cease."<sup>69</sup>

### **Leviticus Chapter 26 -**

#### **Chapter 26**

<sup>1</sup>You shall not make idols for yourselves; neither a carved image nor a *sacred* pillar shall you rear up for yourselves; nor shall you set up an engraved stone in your land, to bow down to it; for I *am* the LORD your God. <sup>2</sup>You shall keep My Sabbaths and reverence My sanctuary: I *am* the LORD.

<sup>3</sup>If you walk in My statutes and keep My commandments, and perform them, <sup>4</sup>then I will give you rain in its season, the land shall yield its produce, and the trees of the field

---

<sup>69</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

shall yield their fruit. <sup>5</sup>Your threshing shall last till the time of vintage, and the vintage shall last till the time of sowing; you shall eat your bread to the full, and dwell in your land safely. <sup>6</sup>I will give peace in the land, and you shall lie down, and none will make *you* afraid; I will rid the land of evil beasts, and the sword will not go through your land. <sup>7</sup>You will chase your enemies, and they shall fall by the sword before you. <sup>8</sup>Five of you shall chase a hundred, and a hundred of you shall put ten thousand to flight; your enemies shall fall by the sword before you.

<sup>9</sup>For I will look on you favorably and make you fruitful, multiply you and confirm My covenant with you. <sup>10</sup>You shall eat the old harvest, and clear out the old because of the new. <sup>11</sup>I will set My tabernacle among you, and My soul shall not abhor you. <sup>12</sup>I will walk among you and be your God, and you shall be My people. <sup>13</sup>I *am* the LORD your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt, that *you* should not be their slaves; I have broken the bands of your yoke and made you walk upright.

<sup>14</sup>But if you do not obey Me, and do not observe all these commandments, <sup>15</sup>and if you despise My statutes, or if your soul abhors My judgments, so that you do not perform all My commandments, *but* break My covenant, <sup>16</sup>I also will do this to you: I will even appoint terror over you, wasting disease and fever which shall consume the eyes and cause sorrow of heart. And you shall sow your seed in vain, for your enemies shall eat it. <sup>17</sup>I will set My face against you, and you shall be defeated by your enemies. Those who hate you shall reign over you, and you shall flee when no one pursues you.

**<sup>18</sup>And after all this, if you do not obey Me, then I will punish you seven times more for your sins. <sup>19</sup>I will break the pride of your power; I will make your heavens like iron and your earth like bronze. <sup>20</sup>And your strength shall be spent in vain; for your land shall not yield its produce, nor shall the trees of the land yield their fruit.**

**<sup>21</sup>Then, if you walk contrary to Me, and are not willing to obey Me, I will bring on you seven times more plagues, according to your sins. <sup>22</sup>I will also send wild beasts among you, which shall rob you of your children, destroy your livestock, and make you few in number; and your highways shall be desolate.**

**<sup>23</sup>And if by these things you are not reformed by Me, but walk contrary to Me, <sup>24</sup>then I also will walk contrary to you, and I will punish you yet seven times for your sins. <sup>25</sup>And I will bring a sword against you that will execute the vengeance of the covenant; when you are gathered together within your cities I will send pestilence among you; and you shall be delivered into the hand of the enemy. <sup>26</sup>When I have cut off your supply of bread, ten women shall bake your bread in one oven, and they shall bring back your bread by weight, and you shall eat and not be satisfied.**

**<sup>27</sup>And after all this, if you do not obey Me, but walk contrary to Me, <sup>28</sup>then I also will walk contrary to you in fury; and I, even I, will chastise you seven times for your sins. <sup>29</sup>You shall eat the flesh of your sons, and you shall eat the flesh of your daughters. <sup>30</sup>I will destroy your high places, cut down your incense altars, and cast your carcasses on the lifeless forms of your idols; and My soul shall abhor you. <sup>31</sup>I will lay your cities waste and bring your sanctuaries to desolation, and I will not smell the fragrance of your sweet aromas. <sup>32</sup>I will bring the land to desolation, and your enemies who dwell in it shall be astonished at it. <sup>33</sup>I will scatter you among the nations and draw out a sword after you; your land shall be desolate and your cities waste. <sup>34</sup>Then the land shall enjoy its sabbaths as long as it lies desolate and you *are* in your enemies' land; then**

the land shall rest and enjoy its sabbaths. <sup>35</sup>As long as *it* lies desolate it shall rest—for the time it did not rest on your sabbaths when you dwelt in it.

<sup>36</sup>And as for those of you who are left, I will send faintness into their hearts in the lands of their enemies; the sound of a shaken leaf shall cause them to flee; they shall flee as though fleeing from a sword, and they shall fall when no one pursues. <sup>37</sup>They shall stumble over one another, as it were before a sword, when no one pursues; and you shall have no *power* to stand before your enemies. <sup>38</sup>You shall perish among the nations, and the land of your enemies shall eat you up. <sup>39</sup>And those of you who are left shall waste away in their iniquity in your enemies' lands; also in their fathers' iniquities, which are with them, they shall waste away.

<sup>40</sup>***But if they confess their iniquity and the iniquity of their fathers, with their unfaithfulness in which they were unfaithful to Me, and that they also have walked contrary to Me, <sup>41</sup>and that I also have walked contrary to them and have brought them into the land of their enemies; if their uncircumcised hearts are humbled, and they accept their guilt— <sup>42</sup>then I will remember My covenant with Jacob, and My covenant with Isaac and My covenant with Abraham I will remember; I will remember the land. <sup>43</sup>The land also shall be left empty by them, and will enjoy its sabbaths while it lies desolate without them; they will accept their guilt, because they despised My judgments and because their soul abhorred My statutes. <sup>44</sup>Yet for all that, when they are in the land of their enemies, I will not cast them away, nor shall I abhor them, to utterly destroy them and break My covenant with them; for I *am* the LORD their God. <sup>45</sup>But for their sake I will remember the covenant of their ancestors, whom I brought out of the land of Egypt in the sight of the nations, that I might be their God: I *am* the LORD.' ”***

<sup>46</sup>These *are* the statutes and judgments and laws which the LORD made between Himself and the children of Israel on Mount Sinai by the hand of Moses.<sup>70</sup>

### Psalm 79:12 -

<sup>12</sup> And **return to our neighbors sevenfold** into their bosom  
Their reproach with which they have reproached You, O Lord.<sup>71</sup>

### Proverbs 6:30-31 -

<sup>30</sup> *People* do not despise a thief  
If he steals to satisfy himself when he is starving.  
<sup>31</sup> Yet *when* he is found, **he must restore sevenfold**;  
He may have to give up all the substance of his house.<sup>72</sup>

---

<sup>70</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>71</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>72</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

**Matthew 5:43-48 -**

<sup>43</sup>“You have heard that it was said, ‘You shall love your neighbor and hate your enemy.’ <sup>44</sup>“But I say to you, love your enemies, bless those who curse you, do good to those who hate you, and pray for those who spitefully use you and persecute you, <sup>45</sup>“that you may be sons of your Father in heaven; for He makes His sun rise on the evil and on the good, and sends rain on the just and on the unjust. <sup>46</sup>“For if you love those who love you, what reward have you? Do not even the tax collectors do the same? <sup>47</sup>“And if you greet your brethren only, what do you do more *than others*? Do not even the tax collectors do so? <sup>48</sup>“**Therefore you shall be perfect, just as your Father in heaven is perfect.**<sup>73</sup>

**Matthew 18:21-35 -**

<sup>21</sup>Then Peter came to Him and said, “Lord, how often shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? Up to seven times?” <sup>22</sup>Jesus said to him, “**I do not say to you, up to seven times, but up to seventy times seven.**” <sup>23</sup>“Therefore the kingdom of heaven is like a certain king who wanted to settle accounts with his servants. <sup>24</sup>“And when he had begun to settle accounts, one was brought to him who owed him ten thousand talents. <sup>25</sup>“But as he was not able to pay, his master commanded that he be sold, with his wife and children and all that he had, and that payment be made. <sup>26</sup>“The servant therefore fell down before him, saying, ‘Master, have patience with me, and I will pay you all.’ <sup>27</sup>“Then the master of that servant was moved with compassion, released him, and forgave him the debt. <sup>28</sup>“But that servant went out and found one of his fellow servants who owed him a hundred denarii; and he laid hands on him and took *him* by the throat, saying, ‘Pay me what you owe!’ <sup>29</sup>“So his fellow servant fell down at his feet and begged him, saying, ‘Have patience with me, and I will pay you all.’ <sup>30</sup>“And he would not, but went and threw him into prison till he should pay the debt. <sup>31</sup>“So when his fellow servants saw what had been done, they were very grieved, and came and told their master all that had been done. <sup>32</sup>“Then his master, after he had called him, said to him, ‘You wicked servant! I forgave you all that debt because you begged me. <sup>33</sup>“Should you not also have had compassion on your fellow servant, just as I had pity on you?’ <sup>34</sup>“And his master was angry, and delivered him to the torturers until he should pay all that was due to him. <sup>35</sup>“**So My heavenly Father also will do to you if each of you, from his heart, does not forgive his brother his trespasses.**”<sup>74</sup>

**Luke 6:37 -**

---

<sup>73</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>74</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>37</sup>“Judge not, and you shall not be judged. Condemn not, and you shall not be condemned. **Forgive, and you will be forgiven.**”<sup>75</sup>

#### **Luke 17:1-4 -**

<sup>1</sup>Then He said to the disciples, “It is impossible that no offenses should come, but woe *to him* through whom they do come! <sup>2</sup>“It would be better for him if a millstone were hung around his neck, and he were thrown into the sea, than that he should offend one of these little ones. <sup>3</sup>“Take heed to yourselves. If your brother sins against you, rebuke him; and if he repents, forgive him. <sup>4</sup>“**And if he sins against you seven times in a day, and seven times in a day returns to you, saying, ‘I repent,’ you shall forgive him.**”<sup>76</sup>

#### **John 14:15 -**

<sup>15</sup>“**If you love Me, keep My commandments.**”<sup>77</sup>

#### **Romans 3:10-26 -**

<sup>10</sup> As it is written:

“**There is none righteous, no, not one;**

<sup>11</sup> **There is none who understands;**

**There is none who seeks after God.**

<sup>12</sup> **They have all turned aside;**

**They have together become unprofitable;**

**There is none who does good, no, not one.”**

<sup>13</sup> “Their throat *is* an open tomb;

With their tongues they have practiced deceit”;

“The poison of asps *is* under their lips”;

<sup>14</sup> “Whose mouth *is* full of cursing and bitterness.”

<sup>15</sup> “Their feet *are* swift to shed blood;

<sup>16</sup> Destruction and misery *are* in their ways;

<sup>17</sup> And the way of peace they have not known.”

<sup>18</sup> “There is no fear of God before their eyes.”

<sup>19</sup>Now we know that whatever the law says, it says to those who are under the law, that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God. <sup>20</sup>Therefore by the deeds of the law no flesh will be justified in His sight, for by the law *is* the knowledge of sin.

<sup>21</sup>But now the righteousness of God apart from the law is revealed, being witnessed by the Law and the Prophets, <sup>22</sup>even the righteousness of God, through faith in Jesus

---

<sup>75</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>76</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>77</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

Christ, to all and on all who believe. For there is no difference; <sup>23</sup>**for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, <sup>24</sup>being justified freely by His grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus, <sup>25</sup>whom God set forth as a propitiation by His blood, through faith, to demonstrate His righteousness, because in His forbearance God had passed over the sins that were previously committed, <sup>26</sup>to demonstrate at the present time His righteousness, that He might be just and the justifier of the one who has faith in Jesus.**<sup>78</sup>

#### **Galatians 6:6-10 -**

<sup>6</sup>Let him who is taught the word share in all good things with him who teaches. <sup>7</sup>**Do not be deceived, God is not mocked; for whatever a man sows, that he will also reap. <sup>8</sup>For he who sows to his flesh will of the flesh reap corruption, but he who sows to the Spirit will of the Spirit reap everlasting life.** <sup>9</sup>And let us not grow weary while doing good, for in due season we shall reap if we do not lose heart. <sup>10</sup>Therefore, as we have opportunity, let us do good to all, especially to those who are of the household of faith.<sup>79</sup>

#### **I John 4:7-21 -**

<sup>7</sup>Beloved, let us love one another, for love is of God; and everyone who loves is born of God and knows God. <sup>8</sup>He who does not love does not know God, for God is love. <sup>9</sup>In this the love of God was manifested toward us, that God has sent His only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through Him. <sup>10</sup>In this is love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us and sent His Son *to be* the propitiation for our sins. <sup>11</sup>Beloved, if God so loved us, we also ought to love one another.

<sup>12</sup>No one has seen God at any time. If we love one another, God abides in us, and His love has been perfected in us. <sup>13</sup>By this we know that we abide in Him, and He in us, because He has given us of His Spirit. <sup>14</sup>And we have seen and testify that the Father has sent the Son *as* Savior of the world. <sup>15</sup>Whoever confesses that Jesus is the Son of God, God abides in him, and he in God. <sup>16</sup>And we have known and believed the love that God has for us. God is love, and he who abides in love abides in God, and God in him.

<sup>17</sup>**Love has been perfected among us in this: that we may have boldness in the day of judgment; because as He is, so are we in this world. <sup>18</sup>There is no fear in love; but perfect love casts out fear, because fear involves torment. But he who fears has not been made perfect in love. <sup>19</sup>We love Him because He first loved us.**

<sup>20</sup>**If someone says, "I love God," and hates his brother, he is a liar; for he who does not love his brother whom he has seen, how can he love God whom he has not**

---

<sup>78</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>79</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.



seen?<sup>21</sup> And this commandment we have from Him: that he who loves God *must* love his brother also.<sup>80</sup>

*So we see that in order to avoid God's wrath, we must obey Him in everything, repent, humble ourselves and forgive those who come against us, even our enemies. Again, when we repent we must also forgive ourselves. Walking in pride is truly an abomination to God and He will destroy those who do so. The world exalts prideful people. **However what men see as being highly esteemed, God finds to be an abomination.** Pride was the main sin of Sodom and her 'daughter' city, Gomorrah. The people in those cities were operating in pride due to their wealth, just as Lucifer did. They were doing their own thing. Because of their wealth and selfishness they had a lot of idle time, so they thought up and engaged in all kinds of evil activities, especially perverted sexual activity such as male homosexuality. Those things were done in pride and were an abomination to God, so He destroyed them with fire. This and other times that God destroyed rebellious people through the ages serve as warnings to us to avoid the same mistakes, (see Proverbs 16:5 above, Deuteronomy 17:2-7, 27:15, Ezekiel 16:48-50, Luke 16:15, I Corinthians chapter 10, II Peter chapter 2 and Jude)*

#### **Deuteronomy 17:2-7 -**

<sup>2</sup>“If there is found among you, within any of your gates which the LORD your God gives you, a man or a woman who has been wicked in the sight of the LORD your God, in transgressing His covenant, <sup>3</sup>“who has gone and served other gods and worshiped them, either the sun or moon or any of the host of heaven, which I have not commanded, <sup>4</sup>“and it is told you, and you hear *of it*, then you shall inquire diligently. **And if *it is indeed true and certain that such an abomination has been committed in Israel,*** <sup>5</sup>“**then you shall bring out to your gates that man or woman who has committed that wicked thing, and shall stone to death that man or woman with stones.** <sup>6</sup>“Whoever is deserving of death shall be put to death on the testimony of two or three witnesses; he shall not be put to death on the testimony of one witness. <sup>7</sup>“The hands of the witnesses shall be the first against him to put him to death, and afterward the hands of all the people. So you shall put away the evil from among you.<sup>81</sup>

#### **Deuteronomy 27:15 -**

<sup>15</sup>“Cursed *is* the one who makes a carved or molded image, **an abomination to the LORD**, the work of the hands of the craftsman, and sets *it up* in secret.’<sup>82</sup>

#### **Ezekiel 16:48-50 -**

---

<sup>80</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>81</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>82</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>48</sup>“As I live,” says the Lord GOD, “neither your sister Sodom nor her daughters have done as you and your daughters have done. <sup>49</sup>“Look, this was the iniquity of your sister Sodom: **She and her daughter had pride, fullness of food, and abundance of idleness; neither did she strengthen the hand of the poor and needy.** <sup>50</sup>“And they were haughty and committed abomination before Me; therefore I took them away as I saw *fit*.<sup>83</sup>

### Luke 16:15 -

<sup>15</sup>And He said to them, “**You are those who justify yourselves before men, but God knows your hearts. For what is highly esteemed among men is an abomination in the sight of God.**<sup>84</sup>

### I Corinthians Chapter 10 -

#### Chapter 10

<sup>1</sup>Moreover, brethren, I do not want you to be unaware that all our fathers were under the cloud, all passed through the sea, <sup>2</sup>all were baptized into Moses in the cloud and in the sea, <sup>3</sup>all ate the same spiritual food, <sup>4</sup>and all drank the same spiritual drink. For they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them, and that Rock was Christ. <sup>5</sup>**But with most of them God was not well pleased, for *their bodies* were scattered in the wilderness.** <sup>6</sup>**Now these things became our examples, to the intent that we should not lust after evil things as they also lusted.** <sup>7</sup>**And do not become idolaters as *were* some of them. As it is written, “The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play.”** <sup>8</sup>**Nor let us commit sexual immorality, as some of them did, and in one day twenty-three thousand fell; <sup>9</sup>nor let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed by serpents; <sup>10</sup>nor complain, as some of them also complained, and were destroyed by the destroyer.** <sup>11</sup>**Now all these things happened to them as examples, and they were written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the ages have come.** <sup>12</sup>Therefore let him who thinks he stands take heed lest he fall. <sup>13</sup>No temptation has overtaken you except such as is common to man; but God *is* faithful, who will not allow you to be tempted beyond what you are able, but with the temptation will also make the way of escape, that you may be able to bear *it*.

<sup>14</sup>**Therefore, my beloved, flee from idolatry.** <sup>15</sup>I speak as to wise men; judge for yourselves what I say. <sup>16</sup>The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ? <sup>17</sup>For we, *though* many, are one bread *and* one body; for we all partake of that one bread. <sup>18</sup>Observe Israel after the flesh: Are not those who eat of the sacrifices partakers of the altar? <sup>19</sup>What am I saying then? That an idol is anything, or what is offered to idols is anything? <sup>20</sup>Rather, that the things which the Gentiles sacrifice they

---

<sup>83</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>84</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

sacrifice to demons and not to God, and I do not want you to have fellowship with demons. <sup>21</sup>You cannot drink the cup of the Lord and the cup of demons; you cannot partake of the Lord's table and of the table of demons. <sup>22</sup>Or do we provoke the Lord to jealousy? Are we stronger than He?

<sup>23</sup>All things are lawful for me, but not all things are helpful; all things are lawful for me, but not all things edify. <sup>24</sup>Let no one seek his own, but each one the other's *well-being*. <sup>25</sup>Eat whatever is sold in the meat market, asking no questions for conscience' sake; <sup>26</sup>for "the earth *is* the LORD's, and all its fullness." <sup>27</sup>If any of those who do not believe invites you *to dinner*, and you desire to go, eat whatever is set before you, asking no question for conscience' sake. <sup>28</sup>But if anyone says to you, "This was offered to idols," do not eat it for the sake of the one who told you, and for conscience' sake; for "the earth *is* the LORD's, and all its fullness." <sup>29</sup>"Conscience," I say, not your own, but that of the other. For why is my liberty judged by another *man's* conscience? <sup>30</sup>But if I partake with thanks, why am I evil spoken of for *the food* over which I give thanks? <sup>31</sup>Therefore, whether you eat or drink, or whatever you do, do all to the glory of God. <sup>32</sup>Give no offense, either to the Jews or to the Greeks or to the church of God, <sup>33</sup>just as I also please all *men* in all *things*, not seeking my own profit, but the *profit* of many, that they may be saved.<sup>85</sup>

## II Peter Chapter 2 -

### Chapter 2

<sup>1</sup>But there were also false prophets among the people, even as there will be false teachers among you, who will secretly bring in destructive heresies, even denying the Lord who bought them, *and* bring on themselves swift destruction. <sup>2</sup>And many will follow their destructive ways, because of whom the way of truth will be blasphemed. <sup>3</sup>**By covetousness they will exploit you with deceptive words; for a long time their judgment has not been idle, and their destruction does not slumber.**

<sup>4</sup>For if God did not spare the angels who sinned, but cast *them* down to hell and delivered *them* into chains of darkness, to be reserved for judgment; <sup>5</sup>and did not spare the ancient world, but saved Noah, *one of eight people*, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood on the world of the ungodly; <sup>6</sup>and turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes, condemned *them* to destruction, making *them* an example to those who afterward would live ungodly; <sup>7</sup>and delivered righteous Lot, *who was* oppressed by the filthy conduct of the wicked <sup>8</sup>(for that righteous man, dwelling among them, tormented *his* righteous soul from day to day by seeing and hearing *their* lawless deeds)— <sup>9</sup>*then* the Lord knows how to deliver the godly out of temptations and to reserve the unjust under punishment for the day of judgment, <sup>10</sup>and especially those who walk according to the flesh in the lust of uncleanness and despise authority. *They are* presumptuous, self-willed. They are not afraid to speak evil of dignitaries, <sup>11</sup>whereas angels, who are greater in power and might, do not bring a reviling accusation against them before the Lord.

---

<sup>85</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>12</sup>But these, like natural brute beasts made to be caught and destroyed, speak evil of the things they do not understand, and will utterly perish in their own corruption, <sup>13</sup>and will receive the wages of unrighteousness, *as* those who count it pleasure to carouse in the daytime. *They are* spots and blemishes, carousing in their own deceptions while they feast with you, <sup>14</sup>having eyes full of adultery and that cannot cease from sin, enticing unstable souls. *They have* a heart trained in covetous practices, *and are* accursed children. <sup>15</sup>They have forsaken the right way and gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Beor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness; <sup>16</sup>but he was rebuked for his iniquity: a dumb donkey speaking with a man's voice restrained the madness of the prophet. <sup>17</sup>These are wells without water, clouds carried by a tempest, for whom is reserved the blackness of darkness forever.

<sup>18</sup>For when they speak great swelling *words* of emptiness, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through lewdness, the ones who have actually escaped from those who live in error. <sup>19</sup>While they promise them liberty, they themselves are slaves of corruption; for by whom a person is overcome, by him also he is brought into bondage. <sup>20</sup>**For if, after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, they are again entangled in them and overcome, the latter end is worse for them than the beginning.** <sup>21</sup>**For it would have been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than having known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered to them.** <sup>22</sup>**But it has happened to them according to the true proverb: "A dog returns to his own vomit," and, "a sow, having washed, to her wallowing in the mire."**<sup>86</sup>

**Jude -**

**Jude**

<sup>1</sup>Jude, a bondservant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James,

To those who are called, sanctified by God the Father, and preserved in Jesus Christ:

<sup>2</sup>Mercy, peace, and love be multiplied to you.

<sup>3</sup>Beloved, while I was very diligent to write to you concerning our common salvation, I found it necessary to write to you exhorting you to contend earnestly for the faith which was once for all delivered to the saints. <sup>4</sup>For certain men have crept in unnoticed, who long ago were marked out for this condemnation, ungodly men, who turn the grace of our God into lewdness and deny the only Lord God and our Lord Jesus Christ.

<sup>5</sup>**But I want to remind you, though you once knew this, that the Lord, having saved the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed those who did not believe.** <sup>6</sup>**And the angels who did not keep their proper domain, but left their own abode, He has reserved in everlasting chains under darkness for the judgment of the great day;** <sup>7</sup>**as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities around them in a similar manner to these, having given themselves over to sexual immorality and gone after strange flesh, are set forth as an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire.** <sup>8</sup>**Likewise also these dreamers defile the flesh, reject authority, and speak evil of dignitaries.** <sup>9</sup>**Yet Michael the archangel, in contending with the devil, when he disputed about the body of Moses, dared not bring against him a reviling**

---

<sup>86</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

accusation, but said, “The Lord rebuke you!” <sup>10</sup>But these speak evil of whatever they do not know; and whatever they know naturally, like brute beasts, in these things they corrupt themselves. <sup>11</sup>Woe to them! For they have gone in the way of Cain, have run greedily in the error of Balaam for profit, and perished in the rebellion of Korah.

<sup>12</sup>These are spots in your love feasts, while they feast with you without fear, serving *only* themselves. *They are* clouds without water, carried about by the winds; late autumn trees without fruit, twice dead, pulled up by the roots; <sup>13</sup>raging waves of the sea, foaming up their own shame; wandering stars for whom is reserved the blackness of darkness forever. <sup>14</sup>Now Enoch, the seventh from Adam, prophesied about these men also, saying, “Behold, the Lord comes with ten thousands of His saints, <sup>15</sup>“to execute judgment on all, to convict all who are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have committed in an ungodly way, and of all the harsh things which ungodly sinners have spoken against Him.”

<sup>16</sup>These are grumblers, complainers, walking according to their own lusts; and they mouth great swelling *words*, flattering people to gain advantage. <sup>17</sup>But you, beloved, remember the words which were spoken before by the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ: <sup>18</sup>how they told you that there would be mockers in the last time who would walk according to their own ungodly lusts. <sup>19</sup>These are sensual persons, who cause divisions, not having the Spirit.

<sup>20</sup>But you, beloved, building yourselves up on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Spirit, <sup>21</sup>keep yourselves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life. <sup>22</sup>And on some have compassion, making a distinction; <sup>23</sup>but others save with fear, pulling *them* out of the fire, hating even the garment defiled by the flesh.

<sup>24</sup> Now to Him who is able to keep you from stumbling,  
And to present *you* faultless  
Before the presence of His glory with exceeding joy,  
<sup>25</sup> To God our Savior,  
Who alone is wise,  
*Be* glory and majesty,  
Dominion and power,  
Both now and forever.  
Amen.<sup>87</sup>

***As we said above, humility is the opposite of pride. Out of the unbelieving, hardened heart of pride comes all evil on the earth. From a repentant, humble heart emanates all Godly acts that the true people of God do. It is critical that with the help of God through Jesus and the Holy Spirit, we learn to overcome pride. We must humble ourselves, repent, (i.e., become contrite of heart) accept Jesus into our lives and grow in obedience to God, so that we can operate by the principles of humility. People who operate in pride reject Christ and follow their own agenda at all costs. They will do nearly anything in order to have their own way. Prideful people will break whatever rules they deem fit in order to***

---

<sup>87</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

*get ahead in this life, not realizing that living like that will cost them their eternity. This is what the Bible refers to when it speaks of spiritual 'blindness'. Prideful people are usually only sad if they get caught in sin or crime. They only say they are sorry if they think it will profit them. They will never truly repent. Humble people consider God and others before themselves. They want to obey God in all things. They do not have their own agenda, but rather wait for God to direct their lives. If they err and realize it, they repent with Godly repentance and ask Him to help them to change. This is what it means to be humble and of a contrite heart. **A true Christian desires to please God from their heart and as a result of that desire to please God they obey Him and do good things for other people.** They feel true regret and heartfelt sorrow when they err and realize they are wrong. Their repentance is genuine and with the help of God results in a permanent change in behavior. They are also willing to receive correction and change for the better. True Christians will never complain, but will be happy with what God does for and to them, knowing that He knows best and has their eternal best interests at heart. These Godly people will have 'spiritual long-sightedness' as they will see the end from the beginning and keep their eye on the prize of eternal life in the presence of God. They will be glad to give up anything and suffer anything in this life to gain eternal life in the presence of God. God stands up for and exalts those who are humble, but He Himself resists the proud, (see the teaching, 'Pride', James chapter 4:6-8 above, Numbers chapter 12, Psalm 21:23, 119:21, 138:6, Proverbs 1:5, 6:16-19, 9:8-10, 18:12, 22:4, Zephaniah 2:3, Matthew 3:1-12, John 9:35-41, I Corinthians 9:24-27, II Corinthians 7:1-12, Colossians 3:12-17, Titus 3:1-11 and I Peter 5:1-11, see also Ephesians 4:18 below).*

## **Numbers Chapter 12 -**

### **Chapter 12**

<sup>1</sup>Then Miriam and Aaron spoke against Moses because of the Ethiopian woman whom he had married; for he had married an Ethiopian woman. <sup>2</sup>So they said, "Has the LORD indeed spoken only through Moses? Has He not spoken through us also?" And the LORD heard *it*. <sup>3</sup>(Now the man Moses *was* very humble, more than all men who *were* on the face of the earth.) <sup>4</sup>Suddenly the LORD said to Moses, Aaron, and Miriam, "Come out, you three, to the tabernacle of meeting!" So the three came out. <sup>5</sup>Then the LORD came down in the pillar of cloud and stood *in* the door of the tabernacle, and called Aaron and Miriam. And they both went forward. <sup>6</sup>Then He said, "Hear now My words:

**If there is a prophet among you,  
I, the LORD, make Myself known to him in a vision;  
I speak to him in a dream.**

<sup>7</sup> **Not so with My servant Moses;  
He is faithful in all My house.**

<sup>8</sup> **I speak with him face to face,  
Even plainly, and not in dark sayings;  
And he sees the form of the LORD.  
Why then were you not afraid  
To speak against My servant Moses?"**

<sup>9</sup>So the anger of the LORD was aroused against them, and He departed. <sup>10</sup>And when the cloud departed from above the tabernacle, suddenly Miriam *became leprous, as white as snow*. Then Aaron turned toward Miriam, and there she was, a leper. <sup>11</sup>So Aaron said to Moses, “Oh, my lord! Please do not lay *this* sin on us, in which we have done foolishly and in which we have sinned. <sup>12</sup>“Please do not let her be as one dead, whose flesh is half consumed when he comes out of his mother’s womb!” <sup>13</sup>So Moses cried out to the LORD, saying, “Please heal her, O God, I pray!”

<sup>14</sup>Then the LORD said to Moses, “If her father had but spit in her face, would she not be shamed seven days? Let her be shut out of the camp seven days, and afterward she may be received *again*.” <sup>15</sup>So Miriam was shut out of the camp seven days, and the people did not journey till Miriam was brought in *again*. <sup>16</sup>And afterward the people moved from Hazeroth and camped in the Wilderness of Paran.<sup>88</sup>

### Psalm 21:23 -

<sup>23</sup> Oh, love the LORD, all you His saints!  
For the LORD preserves the faithful,  
And fully repays the proud person.<sup>89</sup>

### Psalm 119:21 -

<sup>21</sup> You rebuke the proud—the cursed,  
Who stray from Your commandments.<sup>90</sup>

### Psalm 138:6 -

<sup>6</sup> Though the LORD is great, he cares for the humble,  
but he keeps his distance from the proud.<sup>91</sup>

### Proverbs 1:5 -

<sup>5</sup> A wise *man* will hear and increase learning,  
And a man of understanding will attain wise counsel,<sup>92</sup>

### Proverbs 6:16-19 -

---

<sup>88</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>89</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>90</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>91</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>92</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>16</sup> These six *things* the LORD hates,  
 Yes, seven *are* an abomination to Him:  
<sup>17</sup> A proud look,  
 A lying tongue,  
 Hands that shed innocent blood,  
<sup>18</sup> A heart that devises wicked plans,  
 Feet that are swift in running to evil,  
<sup>19</sup> A false witness *who* speaks lies,  
 And one who sows discord among brethren.<sup>93</sup>

### Proverbs 9:8-10 -

<sup>8</sup> Do not correct a scoffer, lest he hate you;  
**Rebuke a wise *man*, and he will love you.**  
<sup>9</sup> **Give *instruction* to a wise *man*, and he will be still wiser;**  
**Teach a just *man*, and he will increase in learning.**  
<sup>10</sup> **“The fear of the LORD *is* the beginning of wisdom,**  
**And the knowledge of the Holy One *is* understanding.<sup>94</sup>**

### Proverbs 18:12 -

<sup>12</sup> Before destruction the heart of a man is haughty,  
 And before honor *is* humility.<sup>95</sup>

### Proverbs 22:4 -

<sup>4</sup> By humility *and* the fear of the LORD  
 Are riches and honor and life.<sup>96</sup>

### Zephaniah 2:3 -

<sup>3</sup> Seek the LORD, all you meek of the earth,  
 Who have upheld His justice.  
 Seek righteousness, seek humility.  
 It may be that you will be hidden  
 In the day of the LORD's anger.<sup>97</sup>

---

93 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

94 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

95 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

96 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.



**Matthew 3:1-12 -**

<sup>1</sup>In those days John the Baptist came preaching in the wilderness of Judea, <sup>2</sup>and saying, “Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand!” <sup>3</sup>For this is he who was spoken of by the prophet Isaiah, saying:

“The voice of one crying in the wilderness:  
‘Prepare the way of the LORD;  
Make His paths straight.’ ”

<sup>4</sup>And John himself was clothed in camel’s hair, with a leather belt around his waist; and his food was locusts and wild honey. <sup>5</sup>Then Jerusalem, all Judea, and all the region around the Jordan went out to him <sup>6</sup>and were baptized by him in the Jordan, confessing their sins. <sup>7</sup>But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming to his baptism, he said to them, “Brood of vipers! Who warned you to flee from the wrath to come? <sup>8</sup>**“Therefore bear fruits worthy of repentance,** <sup>9</sup>“and do not think to say to yourselves, ‘We have Abraham as *our* father.’ For I say to you that God is able to raise up children to Abraham from these stones. <sup>10</sup>“And even now the ax is laid to the root of the trees. Therefore every tree which does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire. <sup>11</sup>“I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance, but He who is coming after me is mightier than I, whose sandals I am not worthy to carry. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and fire. <sup>12</sup>“His winnowing fan *is* in His hand, and He will thoroughly clean out His threshing floor, and gather His wheat into the barn; but He will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.”<sup>98</sup>

**John 9:35-41 -**

<sup>35</sup>Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when He had found him, He said to him, **“Do you believe in the Son of God?”** <sup>36</sup>He answered and said, “Who is He, Lord, that I may believe in Him?” <sup>37</sup>And Jesus said to him, **“You have both seen Him and it is He who is talking with you.”** <sup>38</sup>Then he said, “Lord, I believe!” And he worshiped Him. <sup>39</sup>**And Jesus said, “For judgment I have come into this world, that those who do not see may see, and that those who see may be made blind.”** <sup>40</sup>Then *some* of the Pharisees who were with Him heard these words, and said to Him, “Are we blind also?” <sup>41</sup>Jesus said to them, **“If you were blind, you would have no sin; but now you say, ‘We see.’ Therefore your sin remains.**<sup>99</sup>

**I Corinthians 9:24-27 -**


---

<sup>97</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>98</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>99</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>24</sup>Do you not know that those who run in a race all run, but one receives the prize? Run in such a way that you may obtain *it*. <sup>25</sup>**And everyone who competes for the prize is temperate in all things. Now they do it to obtain a perishable crown, but we for an imperishable crown.** <sup>26</sup>Therefore I run thus: not with uncertainty. Thus I fight: not as *one who* beats the air. <sup>27</sup>But I discipline my body and bring *it* into subjection, lest, when I have preached to others, I myself should become disqualified.<sup>100</sup>

## II Corinthians 7:1-12 -

<sup>1</sup>**Therefore, having these promises, beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.**

<sup>2</sup>Open *your hearts* to us. We have wronged no one, we have corrupted no one, we have cheated no one. <sup>3</sup>I do not say *this* to condemn; for I have said before that you are in our hearts, to die together and to live together. <sup>4</sup>Great *is* my boldness of speech toward you, great *is* my boasting on your behalf. I am filled with comfort. I am exceedingly joyful in all our tribulation. <sup>5</sup>For indeed, when we came to Macedonia, our bodies had no rest, but we were troubled on every side. Outside *were* conflicts, inside *were* fears. <sup>6</sup>Nevertheless God, who comforts the downcast, comforted us by the coming of Titus, <sup>7</sup>and not only by his coming, but also by the consolation with which he was comforted in you, when he told us of your earnest desire, your mourning, your zeal for me, so that I rejoiced even more. <sup>8</sup>For even if I made you sorry with my letter, I do not regret it; though I did regret it. For I perceive that the same epistle made you sorry, though only for a while. <sup>9</sup>**Now I rejoice, not that you were made sorry, but that your sorrow led to repentance. For you were made sorry in a godly manner, that you might suffer loss from us in nothing.** <sup>10</sup>**For godly sorrow produces repentance leading to salvation, not to be regretted; but the sorrow of the world produces death.** <sup>11</sup>For observe this very thing, that you sorrowed in a godly manner: What diligence it produced in you, *what* clearing of yourselves, *what* indignation, *what* fear, *what* vehement desire, *what* zeal, *what* vindication! In all *things* you proved yourselves to be clear in this matter. <sup>12</sup>Therefore, although I wrote to you, *I did not do it* for the sake of him who had done the wrong, nor for the sake of him who suffered wrong, but that our care for you in the sight of God might appear to you.<sup>101</sup>

## Colossians 3:12-17 -

<sup>12</sup>Therefore, as *the* elect of God, holy and beloved, put on tender mercies, kindness, humility, meekness, longsuffering; <sup>13</sup>bearing with one another, and forgiving one another, if anyone has a complaint against another; even as Christ forgave you, so you also *must do*. <sup>14</sup>**But above all these things put on love, which is the bond of perfection.** <sup>15</sup>And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to which also you were called in one body; and be thankful. <sup>16</sup>Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in

---

<sup>100</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>101</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

all wisdom, teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord. <sup>17</sup>And *whatever* you do in word or deed, *do* all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God the Father through Him.<sup>102</sup>

### **Titus 3:1-11 -**

<sup>1</sup>Remind them to be subject to rulers and authorities, to obey, to be ready for every good work, <sup>2</sup>to speak evil of no one, to be peaceable, gentle, showing all humility to all men. <sup>3</sup>For we ourselves were also once foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving various lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful and hating one another. <sup>4</sup>But when the kindness and the love of God our Savior toward man appeared, <sup>5</sup>not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to His mercy He saved us, through the washing of regeneration and renewing of the Holy Spirit, <sup>6</sup>whom He poured out on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Savior, <sup>7</sup>that having been justified by His grace we should become heirs according to the hope of eternal life. <sup>8</sup>This is a faithful saying, and these things I want you to affirm constantly, that those who have believed in God should be careful to maintain good works. These things are good and profitable to men.

<sup>9</sup>**But avoid foolish disputes, genealogies, contentions, and strivings about the law; for they are unprofitable and useless.** <sup>10</sup>**Reject a divisive man after the first and second admonition,** <sup>11</sup>**knowing that such a person is warped and sinning, being self-condemned.**<sup>103</sup>

### **I Peter 5:1-11 -**

<sup>1</sup>The elders who are among you I exhort, I who am a fellow elder and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that will be revealed: <sup>2</sup>**Shepherd the flock of God which is among you, serving as overseers, not by compulsion but willingly, not for dishonest gain but eagerly;** <sup>3</sup>**nor as being lords over those entrusted to you, but being examples to the flock;** <sup>4</sup>**and when the Chief Shepherd appears, you will receive the crown of glory that does not fade away.**

<sup>5</sup>**Likewise you younger people, submit yourselves to *your* elders. Yes, all of *you* be submissive to one another, and be clothed with humility, for**

**“God resists the proud,  
But gives grace to the humble.”**

<sup>6</sup>**Therefore humble yourselves under the mighty hand of God, that He may exalt you in due time,** <sup>7</sup>**casting all your care upon Him, for He cares for you.** <sup>8</sup>**Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil walks about like a roaring lion, seeking whom he may devour.** <sup>9</sup>**Resist him, steadfast in the faith, knowing that the same sufferings are experienced by your brotherhood in the world.** <sup>10</sup>**But may the God of all grace, who called us to His eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after you have suffered**

---

<sup>102</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>103</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

**a while, perfect, establish, strengthen, and settle you.** <sup>11</sup>To Him *be* the glory and the dominion forever and ever. Amen.<sup>104</sup>

*In God's great plan for man He works through various means in order to help man become humble and shun pride. **The most important things that God has made available to help us overcome pride with all of its evil consequences and to help us become humble, is to allow us to repent of our sins, accept Jesus Christ as our Lord and Savior, be baptized in His name and receive the Holy Spirit.** Once we repent and accept Jesus into our lives, we can get spiritually 'clean' with submersion water baptism in the name of Jesus Christ, (or Father, Son and Holy Spirit). **Water baptism breaks the power of sin in our lives.** With water baptism, the sin of our 'old man' is washed away and he symbolically 'dies', then we come out of the water a new person, cleansed of our former trespasses or sins. **After we are baptized, we must NOT go back to the former sinful, fleshly things that we participated in prior to salvation. Otherwise, our latter state will be worse than our former.** After water baptism, God offers us directly from Jesus the baptism of the Holy Spirit and of 'fire'. This second baptism may come when someone who is filled with the Holy Spirit lays hands on another person and prays for it. Or Jesus may give it to someone directly, especially when they ask Him. When someone receives the baptism of the Holy Spirit they may speak in tongues or not. Usually there is some outward sign that they have received the baptism of the Holy Spirit such as speaking in tongues, holy laughter, emotional release, etc. **However in my opinion, the best way to confirm the baptism of the Holy Spirit is to see a positive, Godly change in the person's character and to see them begin to quickly obey God in all things.** The baptism of the Holy Spirit is also a baptism of 'fire', as the Spirit of God will lead us into the 'spiritual wilderness' so that God can test us through the 'fiery trials' at the hands of the devil. During our lives, this 'fire' of the Holy Spirit will burn up all the garbage in our hearts that separates us from God. During the 'spiritual wilderness' experience, Satan will bring on us temptation and persecution in order for God to see if we will obey Him even during difficult times, (see Deuteronomy chapter 8 and Matthew 3:10 above).*

*When we are suffering the affliction of the devil in the 'wilderness', if we refuse to believe the lies of the enemy but rather get into the Word of God and learn to hear from and obey Him, then we will control our tongues by the grace of God and come out of the wilderness with the power of the Holy Spirit, just as Jesus did. Though no human can control their tongue in their own power, with God's help we can have a change of heart from one of prideful unbelief and hardness to a soft one of humble repentance and obedience to God. Then our words will change naturally from negative, evil venom to that of kind, edifying loving speech. With this positive, loving speech God will give us power and authority over the enemy. This is a process, but it starts in the 'spiritual wilderness' that begins immediately after the baptism of the Holy Spirit. It is in the wilderness that God gives us a 'heart transplant' to replace the unbelieving, prideful 'heart of stone' with a soft, believing 'heart of flesh'. Then God writes His laws on our*

---

<sup>104</sup>The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

*hearts and gives us the desire to obey Him from within our spirit and soul, rather than from a fleshly obligation.*

*The minimum time in the spiritual wilderness will be 40 days and nights, though many people stay in the 'wilderness' much longer, as they do not know what it is all about and thus cannot cooperate with the Holy Spirit in the whole maturation process in Christ. Without this understanding, many Christians spend their whole lives in the 'wilderness' going in circles and never really accomplish what God sent them here on earth to do.*

*Tough it is clearly outlined in the Bible; the Christian church at large is ignorant of this process. As a result, most of God's people do not learn how to grow up according to this plan that He has developed for us. The power from the Holy Spirit that we receive when we come out of the wilderness will help us to gain wisdom, understanding and revelatory knowledge from God. This power will also help us move toward perfection and humility in Christ. We call this state of perfection the 'life in Christ', (see the teachings, 'Life in Christ', 'UNDERSTANDING - The Key to Eternity' and 'KNOWLEDGE - The Key to Perfection'). In this place of perfection or maturity in Christ, which is truly dwelling in the secret place of the Most High, no evil will befall us and all of the promises of God will come to pass in our lives automatically. In that place we will not get sick and do not even have to die! With the help of God, it is this 'secret place' of perfection in Christ in this life that we need to aspire to attain. Unfortunately, most people will NOT make it to this place before they die. But as long as they are on the 'path to perfection' in Jesus and are making progress away from pride and toward humility, God will still allow them into His kingdom when they die or if Jesus comes back before they die. However, enough people will have to get close to this place of perfection in Christ, where humility reigns in their lives and not pride, or Jesus will NOT come back. He is coming back for a church 'without spot or wrinkle' that has become a spiritual 'virgin' and properly use His ministry gifts, (apostle, prophet, evangelist, pastor and teacher) to grow up and become mature in Him. Jesus is only coming back for a church or 'bride' that has perfected herself with the help of the bridesmaid, (the Holy Spirit) and is ready for her bridegroom, the wedding feast and the rest of eternity with Him. Jesus is coming back for a people who have given up pride and all its evil branches and replaced it with humility and all its Godly traits. He is coming back for a people who can 'see' in the Spirit to follow the true path of humility in Christ. **We must maintain our 'secret dwelling place' in Christ by 'abiding' in Him through daily prayerful Bible study with the guidance of the Holy Spirit, prayer, (including praying healing and order into our bodies), spending time with God and taking communion daily.** *This is how we foster a true, loving relationship with God that will lead us into true, loving relationships with other people.* (see the teachings, 'Christianity 101', 'Doctrine of Baptisms', 'The Truth About Healing', 'The Path to Perfection', I Corinthians chapter 10, John 15:1-17, Revelation 21:2 above, Psalm chapter 91, Proverbs 18:21, Isaiah 48:10, 62:5, Ezekiel 18:30-32, 36:22-32, Matthew 12:33-37, Luke 4:1-15, 6:43-45, 10:19, John 3:22-36, Acts 10:34-48, Romans chapter 6, I Corinthians 11:17-34, II Corinthians 5:17-21, 11:2, Ephesians 4:11-5:33, James chapter 3, II Peter 2:20-22, Revelation 21:9-27 and 22:16-17).*

**Psalm Chapter 91 -**

**Psalm 91**

1 He who dwells in the secret place of the Most High  
 Shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty.  
 2 I will say of the LORD, "*He is my refuge and my fortress;*  
 My God, in Him I will trust."  
 3 Surely He shall deliver you from the snare of the fowler  
*And* from the perilous pestilence.  
 4 He shall cover you with His feathers,  
 And under His wings you shall take refuge;  
 His truth *shall be your* shield and buckler.  
 5 You shall not be afraid of the terror by night,  
*Nor* of the arrow *that* flies by day,  
 6 *Nor* of the pestilence *that* walks in darkness,  
*Nor* of the destruction *that* lays waste at noonday.  
 7 A thousand may fall at your side,  
 And ten thousand at your right hand;  
*But* it shall not come near you.  
 8 Only with your eyes shall you look,  
 And see the reward of the wicked.  
 9 **Because you have made the LORD, *who is my refuge,***  
***Even the Most High, your dwelling place,***  
 10 **No evil shall befall you,**  
**Nor shall any plague come near your dwelling;**  
 11 For He shall give His angels charge over you,  
 To keep you in all your ways.  
 12 In *their* hands they shall bear you up,  
 Lest you dash your foot against a stone.  
 13 You shall tread upon the lion and the cobra,  
 The young lion and the serpent you shall trample underfoot.  
 14 "Because he has set his love upon Me, therefore I will deliver him;  
 I will set him on high, because he has known My name.  
 15 He shall call upon Me, and I will answer him;  
 I *will be* with him in trouble;  
 I will deliver him and honor him.  
 16 With long life I will satisfy him,  
 And show him My salvation."<sup>105</sup>

**Proverbs 18:21 -**

21 **Death and life *are* in the power of the tongue,**  
 And those who love it will eat its fruit.<sup>106</sup>

---

105 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

106 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

**Isaiah 48:10 -**

<sup>10</sup> Behold, I have refined you, but not as silver;  
**I have tested you in the furnace of affliction.**<sup>107</sup>

**Isaiah 62:5 -**

<sup>5</sup> For *as* a young man marries a virgin,  
 So shall your sons marry you;  
 And *as* the bridegroom rejoices over the bride,  
 So shall your God rejoice over you.<sup>108</sup>

**Ezekiel 18:30-32 -**

<sup>30</sup>“Therefore I will judge you, O house of Israel, every one according to his ways,” says the Lord GOD. **“Repent, and turn from all your transgressions, so that iniquity will not be your ruin.”** <sup>31</sup>“Cast away from you all the transgressions which you have committed, and get yourselves a new heart and a new spirit. For why should you die, O house of Israel? <sup>32</sup>“For I have no pleasure in the death of one who dies,” says the Lord GOD. “Therefore turn and live!”<sup>109</sup>

**Ezekiel 36:22-32 -**

<sup>22</sup>“Therefore say to the house of Israel, ‘Thus says the Lord GOD: “I do not do *this* for your sake, O house of Israel, but for My holy name’s sake, which you have profaned among the nations wherever you went. <sup>23</sup>“And I will sanctify My great name, which has been profaned among the nations, which you have profaned in their midst; and the nations shall know that I *am* the LORD,” says the Lord GOD, “when I am hallowed in you before their eyes. <sup>24</sup>“For I will take you from among the nations, gather you out of all countries, and bring you into your own land. <sup>25</sup>“**Then I will sprinkle clean water on you, and you shall be clean; I will cleanse you from all your filthiness and from all your idols.** <sup>26</sup>“**I will give you a new heart and put a new spirit within you; I will take the heart of stone out of your flesh and give you a heart of flesh.** <sup>27</sup>“**I will put My Spirit within you and cause you to walk in My statutes, and you will keep My judgments and do *them*.** <sup>28</sup>“Then you shall dwell in the land that I gave to your fathers; you shall be My people, and I will be your God. <sup>29</sup>“I will deliver you from all your uncleannesses. I will call for the grain and multiply it, and bring no famine upon you. <sup>30</sup>“And I will multiply the fruit of your trees and the increase of your fields, so that you

---

<sup>107</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>108</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>109</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

need never again bear the reproach of famine among the nations. <sup>31</sup>“Then you will remember your evil ways and your deeds that *were* not good; and you will loathe yourselves in your own sight, for your iniquities and your abominations. <sup>32</sup>“Not for your sake do I do *this*,” says the Lord GOD, “let it be known to you. Be ashamed and confounded for your own ways, O house of Israel!”<sup>110</sup>

### Matthew 12:33-37 -

<sup>33</sup>“Either make the tree good and its fruit good, or else make the tree bad and its fruit bad; for a tree is known by *its* fruit. <sup>34</sup>“**Brood of vipers! How can you, being evil, speak good things? For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks.** <sup>35</sup>“**A good man out of the good treasure of his heart brings forth good things, and an evil man out of the evil treasure brings forth evil things.** <sup>36</sup>“**But I say to you that for every idle word men may speak, they will give account of it in the day of judgment.** <sup>37</sup>“**For by your words you will be justified, and by your words you will be condemned.”<sup>111</sup>**

### Luke 4:1-15 -

<sup>1</sup>Then Jesus, being filled with the Holy Spirit, returned from the Jordan and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness, <sup>2</sup>being tempted for forty days by the devil. And in those days He ate nothing, and afterward, when they had ended, He was hungry. <sup>3</sup>And the devil said to Him, “If You are the Son of God, command this stone to become bread.” <sup>4</sup>But Jesus answered him, saying, “**It is written, ‘Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God.’**” <sup>5</sup>Then the devil, taking Him up on a high mountain, showed Him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. <sup>6</sup>And the devil said to Him, “All this authority I will give You, and their glory; for *this* has been delivered to me, and I give it to whomever I wish. <sup>7</sup>“Therefore, if You will worship before me, all will be Yours.” <sup>8</sup>And Jesus answered and said to him, “**Get behind Me, Satan! For it is written, ‘You shall worship the LORD your God, and Him only you shall serve.’**” <sup>9</sup>Then he brought Him to Jerusalem, set Him on the pinnacle of the temple, and said to Him, “If You are the Son of God, throw Yourself down from here. <sup>10</sup>“For it is written:

‘He shall give His angels charge over you,  
To keep you,’

<sup>11</sup>“and,

‘In their hands they shall bear you up,  
Lest you dash your foot against a stone.’”

<sup>12</sup>And Jesus answered and said to him, “**It has been said, ‘You shall not tempt the LORD your God.’**” <sup>13</sup>Now when the devil had ended every temptation, he departed from Him until an opportune time.

---

<sup>110</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>111</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.



**<sup>14</sup>Then Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit to Galilee, and news of Him went out through all the surrounding region. <sup>15</sup>And He taught in their synagogues, being glorified by all.**<sup>112</sup>

**Luke 6:43-45 -**

**<sup>43</sup>“For a good tree does not bear bad fruit, nor does a bad tree bear good fruit. <sup>44</sup>“For every tree is known by its own fruit. For *men* do not gather figs from thorns, nor do they gather grapes from a bramble bush. <sup>45</sup>“A good man out of the good treasure of his heart brings forth good; and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart brings forth evil. For out of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaks.**<sup>113</sup>

**Luke 10:19 -**

**<sup>19</sup>“Behold, I give you the authority to trample on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy, and nothing shall by any means hurt you.**<sup>114</sup>

**John 3:22-36 -**

<sup>22</sup>After these things Jesus and His disciples came into the land of Judea, and there He remained with them and baptized. <sup>23</sup>Now John also was baptizing in Aenon near Salim, because there was much water there. And they came and were baptized. <sup>24</sup>For John had not yet been thrown into prison. <sup>25</sup>Then there arose a dispute between *some* of John’s disciples and the Jews about purification. <sup>26</sup>And they came to John and said to him, “Rabbi, He who was with you beyond the Jordan, to whom you have testified—behold, He is baptizing, and all are coming to Him!” <sup>27</sup>John answered and said, “A man can receive nothing unless it has been given to him from heaven. <sup>28</sup>“You yourselves bear me witness, that I said, ‘I am not the Christ,’ but, ‘I have been sent before Him.’ <sup>29</sup>“**He who has the bride is the bridegroom; but the friend of the bridegroom, who stands and hears him, rejoices greatly because of the bridegroom’s voice.** Therefore this joy of mine is fulfilled. <sup>30</sup>“He must increase, but I *must* decrease. <sup>31</sup>“He who comes from above is above all; he who is of the earth is earthly and speaks of the earth. He who comes from heaven is above all. <sup>32</sup>“And what He has seen and heard, that He testifies; and no one receives His testimony. <sup>33</sup>“He who has received His testimony has certified that God is true. <sup>34</sup>“For He whom God has sent speaks the words of God, for God does not give the Spirit by measure. <sup>35</sup>“The Father loves the Son, and has given all things into His hand.

---

<sup>112</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>113</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>114</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>36</sup>“He who believes in the Son has everlasting life; and he who does not believe the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abides on him.”<sup>115</sup>

### Acts 10:34-48 -

<sup>34</sup>Then Peter opened *his* mouth and said: “In truth I perceive that God shows no partiality. <sup>35</sup>“But in every nation whoever fears Him and works righteousness is accepted by Him. <sup>36</sup>“The word which *God* sent to the children of Israel, preaching peace through Jesus Christ—He is Lord of all— <sup>37</sup>“that word you know, which was proclaimed throughout all Judea, and began from Galilee after the baptism which John preached: <sup>38</sup>“**how God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and with power, who went about doing good and healing all who were oppressed by the devil, for God was with Him.** <sup>39</sup>“And we are witnesses of all things which He did both in the land of the Jews and in Jerusalem, whom they killed by hanging on a tree. <sup>40</sup>“Him God raised up on the third day, and showed Him openly, <sup>41</sup>“not to all the people, but to witnesses chosen before by God, *even* to us who ate and drank with Him after He arose from the dead. <sup>42</sup>“And He commanded us to preach to the people, and to testify that it is He who was ordained by God *to be* Judge of the living and the dead. <sup>43</sup>“To Him all the prophets witness that, through His name, whoever believes in Him will receive remission of sins.”

<sup>44</sup>**While Peter was still speaking these words, the Holy Spirit fell upon all those who heard the word.** <sup>45</sup>**And those of the circumcision who believed were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because the gift of the Holy Spirit had been poured out on the Gentiles also.** <sup>46</sup>**For they heard them speak with tongues and magnify God.** Then Peter answered, <sup>47</sup>“Can anyone forbid water, that these should not be baptized who have received the Holy Spirit just as we *have*?” <sup>48</sup>And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord. Then they asked him to stay a few days.<sup>116</sup>

### Romans Chapter 6 -

#### Chapter 6

<sup>1</sup>What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin that grace may abound? <sup>2</sup>Certainly not! How shall we who died to sin live any longer in it? <sup>3</sup>**Or do you not know that as many of us as were baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into His death?** <sup>4</sup>**Therefore we were buried with Him through baptism into death, that just as Christ was raised from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.** <sup>5</sup>**For if we have been united together in the likeness of His death, certainly we also shall be *in the likeness* of His resurrection,** <sup>6</sup>**knowing this, that our old man was crucified with *Him*, that the body of sin might be done away with, that we should no longer be slaves of sin.** <sup>7</sup>**For he who has died has been freed from sin.** <sup>8</sup>**Now if we died with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with Him,** <sup>9</sup>**knowing that Christ, having been raised from the dead, dies no more. Death no longer has**

---

<sup>115</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>116</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

dominion over Him. <sup>10</sup>For *the death* that He died, He died to sin once for all; but *the life* that He lives, He lives to God. <sup>11</sup>Likewise you also, reckon yourselves to be dead indeed to sin, but alive to God in Christ Jesus our Lord. <sup>12</sup>Therefore do not let sin reign in your mortal body, that you should obey it in its lusts. <sup>13</sup>And do not present your members *as* instruments of unrighteousness to sin, but present yourselves to God as being alive from the dead, and your members *as* instruments of righteousness to God. <sup>14</sup>For sin shall not have dominion over you, for you are not under law but under grace.

<sup>15</sup>What then? Shall we sin because we are not under law but under grace? Certainly not! <sup>16</sup>Do you not know that to whom you present yourselves slaves to obey, you are that one's slaves whom you obey, whether of sin *leading to death*, or of obedience *leading to righteousness*? <sup>17</sup>But God be thanked that *though* you were slaves of sin, yet you obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine to which you were delivered. <sup>18</sup>And having been set free from sin, you became slaves of righteousness. <sup>19</sup>I speak in human *terms* because of the weakness of your flesh. **For just as you presented your members as slaves of uncleanness, and of lawlessness *leading to more* lawlessness, so now present your members as slaves of righteousness for holiness.** <sup>20</sup>For when you were slaves of sin, you were free in regard to righteousness. <sup>21</sup>What fruit did you have then in the things of which you are now ashamed? For the end of those things *is* death. <sup>22</sup>But now having been set free from sin, and having become slaves of God, you have your fruit to holiness, and the end, everlasting life. <sup>23</sup>**For the wages of sin *is* death, but the gift of God *is* eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.**<sup>117</sup>

### I Corinthians 11:17-34 -

<sup>17</sup>Now in giving these instructions I do not praise *you*, since you come together not for the better but for the worse. <sup>18</sup>For first of all, when you come together as a church, I hear that there are divisions among you, and in part I believe it. <sup>19</sup>For there must also be factions among you, that those who are approved may be recognized among you. <sup>20</sup>Therefore when you come together in one place, it is not to eat the Lord's Supper. <sup>21</sup>For in eating, each one takes his own supper ahead of *others*; and one is hungry and another is drunk. <sup>22</sup>What! Do you not have houses to eat and drink in? Or do you despise the church of God and shame those who have nothing? What shall I say to you? Shall I praise you in this? I do not praise *you*.

<sup>23</sup>**For I received from the Lord that which I also delivered to you: that the Lord Jesus on the *same* night in which He was betrayed took bread; <sup>24</sup>and when He had given thanks, He broke *it* and said, "Take, eat; this is My body which is broken for you; do this in remembrance of Me."** <sup>25</sup>In the same manner *He* also *took* the cup after supper, saying, "This cup is the new covenant in My blood. This do, as often as you drink *it*, in remembrance of Me."<sup>26</sup>For as often as you eat this bread and drink this cup, you proclaim the Lord's death till He comes.

<sup>27</sup>Therefore whoever eats this bread or drinks *this* cup of the Lord in an unworthy manner will be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord. <sup>28</sup>But let a man

---

<sup>117</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

examine himself, and so let him eat of the bread and drink of the cup. <sup>29</sup>For he who eats and drinks in an unworthy manner eats and drinks judgment to himself, not discerning the Lord's body. <sup>30</sup>For this reason many *are* weak and sick among you, and many sleep. <sup>31</sup>For if we would judge ourselves, we would not be judged. <sup>32</sup>But when we are judged, we are chastened by the Lord, that we may not be condemned with the world. <sup>33</sup>Therefore, my brethren, when you come together to eat, wait for one another. <sup>34</sup>But if anyone is hungry, let him eat at home, lest you come together for judgment. And the rest I will set in order when I come.118

## II Corinthians 5:17-21 -

<sup>17</sup>Therefore, if anyone *is* in Christ, *he is* a new creation; old things have passed away; behold, all things have become new. <sup>18</sup>Now all things *are* of God, who has reconciled us to Himself through Jesus Christ, and has given us the ministry of reconciliation, <sup>19</sup>that is, that God was in Christ reconciling the world to Himself, not imputing their trespasses to them, and has committed to us the word of reconciliation. <sup>20</sup>Now then, we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God were pleading through us: we implore *you* on Christ's behalf, be reconciled to God. <sup>21</sup>For He made Him who knew no sin *to be* sin for us, that we might become the righteousness of God in Him.119

## II Corinthians 11:2 -

<sup>2</sup>For I am jealous for you with godly jealousy. **For I have betrothed you to one husband, that I may present *you as a chaste virgin to Christ.***120

## Ephesians 4:11-5:33 -

<sup>11</sup>And He Himself gave some *to be* apostles, some prophets, some evangelists, and some pastors and teachers, <sup>12</sup>for the equipping of the saints for the work of ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ, <sup>13</sup>till we all come to the unity of the faith and of the knowledge of the Son of God, to a perfect man, to the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ; <sup>14</sup>that we should no longer be children, tossed to and fro and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the trickery of men, in the cunning craftiness of deceitful plotting, <sup>15</sup>but, speaking the truth in love, may grow up in all things into Him who is the head—Christ—<sup>16</sup>from whom the whole body, joined and knit together by what every joint supplies, according to the effective working by which every part does its share, causes growth of the body for the edifying of itself in love.

---

118*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

119*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

120*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>17</sup>This I say, therefore, and testify in the Lord, that you should no longer walk as the rest of the Gentiles walk, in the futility of their mind, <sup>18</sup>having their understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God, because of the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart; <sup>19</sup>who, being past feeling, have given themselves over to lewdness, to work all uncleanness with greediness. <sup>20</sup>But you have not so learned Christ, <sup>21</sup>if indeed you have heard Him and have been taught by Him, as the truth is in Jesus: <sup>22</sup>that you put off, concerning your former conduct, the old man which grows corrupt according to the deceitful lusts, <sup>23</sup>and be renewed in the spirit of your mind, <sup>24</sup>and that you put on the new man which was created according to God, in true righteousness and holiness.

<sup>25</sup>Therefore, putting away lying, “Let each one *of you* speak truth with his neighbor,” for we are members of one another. <sup>26</sup>“Be angry, and do not sin”: do not let the sun go down on your wrath, <sup>27</sup>nor give place to the devil. <sup>28</sup>Let him who stole steal no longer, but rather let him labor, working with *his* hands what is good, that he may have something to give him who has need. <sup>29</sup>Let no corrupt word proceed out of your mouth, but what is good for necessary edification, that it may impart grace to the hearers. <sup>30</sup>And do not grieve the Holy Spirit of God, by whom you were sealed for the day of redemption. <sup>31</sup>Let all bitterness, wrath, anger, clamor, and evil speaking be put away from you, with all malice. <sup>32</sup>And be kind to one another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, just as God in Christ forgave you.

## Chapter 5

<sup>1</sup>Therefore be imitators of God as dear children. <sup>2</sup>And walk in love, as Christ also has loved us and given Himself for us, an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet-smelling aroma. <sup>3</sup>But fornication and all uncleanness or covetousness, let it not even be named among you, as is fitting for saints; <sup>4</sup>neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor coarse jesting, which are not fitting, but rather giving of thanks. <sup>5</sup>For this you know, that no fornicator, unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, has any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and God. <sup>6</sup>Let no one deceive you with empty words, for because of these things the wrath of God comes upon the sons of disobedience. <sup>7</sup>Therefore do not be partakers with them.

<sup>8</sup>For you were once darkness, but now *you are* light in the Lord. Walk as children of light <sup>9</sup>(for the fruit of the Spirit *is* in all goodness, righteousness, and truth), <sup>10</sup>finding out what is acceptable to the Lord. <sup>11</sup>And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather expose *them*. <sup>12</sup>For it is shameful even to speak of those things which are done by them in secret. <sup>13</sup>But all things that are exposed are made manifest by the light, for whatever makes manifest is light. <sup>14</sup>Therefore He says:

“Awake, you who sleep,  
Arise from the dead,  
And Christ will give you light.”

<sup>15</sup>See then that you walk circumspectly, not as fools but as wise, <sup>16</sup>redeeming the time, because the days are evil. <sup>17</sup>Therefore do not be unwise, but understand what the will of the Lord *is*. <sup>18</sup>And do not be drunk with wine, in which is dissipation; but be filled with the Spirit, <sup>19</sup>speaking to one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs,

singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord, <sup>20</sup>giving thanks always for all things to God the Father in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, <sup>21</sup>submitting to one another in the fear of God.

<sup>22</sup>Wives, submit to your own husbands, as to the Lord. <sup>23</sup>For the husband is head of the wife, as also Christ is head of the church; and He is the Savior of the body. <sup>24</sup>Therefore, just as the church is subject to Christ, so *let the wives be* to their own husbands in everything. **<sup>25</sup>Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ also loved the church and gave Himself for her, <sup>26</sup>that He might sanctify and cleanse her with the washing of water by the word, <sup>27</sup>that He might present her to Himself a glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle or any such thing, but that she should be holy and without blemish.** <sup>28</sup>So husbands ought to love their own wives as their own bodies; he who loves his wife loves himself. <sup>29</sup>For no one ever hated his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, just as the Lord *does* the church. <sup>30</sup>For we are members of His body, of His flesh and of His bones. <sup>31</sup>**“For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh.”** <sup>32</sup>**This is a great mystery, but I speak concerning Christ and the church.** <sup>33</sup>Nevertheless let each one of you in particular so love his own wife as himself, and let the wife *see* that she respects *her* husband<sup>121</sup>

### James Chapter 3 -

#### Chapter 3

<sup>1</sup>My brethren, let not many of you become teachers, knowing that we shall receive a stricter judgment. <sup>2</sup>For we all stumble in many things. If anyone does not stumble in word, he *is* a perfect man, able also to bridle the whole body. <sup>3</sup>Indeed, we put bits in horses' mouths that they may obey us, and we turn their whole body. <sup>4</sup>Look also at ships: although they are so large and are driven by fierce winds, they are turned by a very small rudder wherever the pilot desires. <sup>5</sup>Even so the tongue is a little member and boasts great things. See how great a forest a little fire kindles! <sup>6</sup>And the tongue *is* a fire, a world of iniquity. The tongue is so set among our members that it defiles the whole body, and sets on fire the course of nature; and it is set on fire by hell. <sup>7</sup>For every kind of beast and bird, of reptile and creature of the sea, is tamed and has been tamed by mankind. **<sup>8</sup>But no man can tame the tongue. It is an unruly evil, full of deadly poison.** <sup>9</sup>With it we bless our God and Father, and with it we curse men, who have been made in the similitude of God. <sup>10</sup>Out of the same mouth proceed blessing and cursing. My brethren, these things ought not to be so. <sup>11</sup>Does a spring send forth fresh *water* and bitter from the same opening? <sup>12</sup>Can a fig tree, my brethren, bear olives, or a grapevine bear figs? Thus no spring yields both salt water and fresh.

<sup>13</sup>Who *is* wise and understanding among you? Let him show by good conduct *that* his works *are done* in the meekness of wisdom. <sup>14</sup>But if you have bitter envy and self-seeking in your hearts, do not boast and lie against the truth. <sup>15</sup>This wisdom does not descend from above, but *is* earthly, sensual, demonic. <sup>16</sup>For where envy and self-seeking *exist*, confusion and every evil thing *are* there. <sup>17</sup>But the wisdom that is from above is

---

<sup>121</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

first pure, then peaceable, gentle, willing to yield, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality and without hypocrisy. <sup>18</sup>Now the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace by those who make peace.<sup>122</sup>

## II Peter 2:20-22 -

<sup>20</sup>**For if, after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, they are again entangled in them and overcome, the latter end is worse for them than the beginning.** <sup>21</sup>For it would have been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than having known *it*, to turn from the holy commandment delivered to them. <sup>22</sup>But it has happened to them according to the true proverb: “A dog returns to his own vomit,” and, “a sow, having washed, to her wallowing in the mire.”<sup>123</sup>

## Revelation 21:9-27 -

<sup>9</sup>Then one of the seven angels who had the seven bowls filled with the seven last plagues came to me and talked with me, saying, **“Come, I will show you the bride, the Lamb’s wife.”** <sup>10</sup>And he carried me away in the Spirit to a great and high mountain, and showed me the great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God, <sup>11</sup>having the glory of God. Her light *was* like a most precious stone, like a jasper stone, clear as crystal. <sup>12</sup>Also she had a great and high wall with twelve gates, and twelve angels at the gates, and names written on them, which are *the names* of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel: <sup>13</sup>three gates on the east, three gates on the north, three gates on the south, and three gates on the west. <sup>14</sup>Now the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and on them were the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb. <sup>15</sup>And he who talked with me had a gold reed to measure the city, its gates, and its wall. <sup>16</sup>The city is laid out as a square; its length is as great as its breadth. And he measured the city with the reed: twelve thousand furlongs. Its length, breadth, and height are equal. <sup>17</sup>Then he measured its wall: one hundred *and* forty-four cubits, *according* to the measure of a man, that is, of an angel. <sup>18</sup>The construction of its wall *was of* jasper; and the city *was* pure gold, like clear glass. <sup>19</sup>The foundations of the wall of the city *were* adorned with all kinds of precious stones: the first foundation *was* jasper, the second sapphire, the third chalcedony, the fourth emerald, <sup>20</sup>the fifth sardonyx, the sixth sardius, the seventh chrysolite, the eighth beryl, the ninth topaz, the tenth chrysopease, the eleventh jacinth, and the twelfth amethyst. <sup>21</sup>The twelve gates *were* twelve pearls: each individual gate was of one pearl. And the street of the city *was* pure gold, like transparent glass.

<sup>22</sup>But I saw no temple in it, for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are its temple. <sup>23</sup>The city had no need of the sun or of the moon to shine in it, for the glory of God illuminated it. The Lamb *is* its light. <sup>24</sup>And the nations of those who are saved shall walk in its light, and the kings of the earth bring their glory and honor into it. <sup>25</sup>Its gates shall

---

<sup>122</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>123</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

not be shut at all by day (there shall be no night there). <sup>26</sup>And they shall bring the glory and the honor of the nations into it. <sup>27</sup>**But there shall by no means enter it anything that defiles, or causes an abomination or a lie, but only those who are written in the Lamb's Book of Life.**<sup>124</sup>

#### **Revelation 22:16-17 -**

<sup>16</sup>“I, Jesus, have sent My angel to testify to you these things in the churches. I am the Root and the Offspring of David, the Bright and Morning Star.” <sup>17</sup>**And the Spirit and the bride say, “Come!”** And let him who hears say, “Come!” And let him who thirsts come. Whoever desires, let him take the water of life freely.<sup>125</sup>

#### **B. Fear vs. Faith -**

*Fear of anything other than the Lord, is the main way that the devil keeps us separated from God. **Submitting to the fear of anything except God is a sin. Feeling the presence of fear is NOT a sin.** Unrighteous fear comes from the presence of a demonic spirit that tries to keep us from doing God's will. **Fear is the opposite of faith.** When we submit to the spirit of fear then we are saying to God that we do not trust Him. He considers this a sin. If we are walking according to the Spirit of God then we will do what God tells us regardless of the consequences. This stubborn obedience, (when we will do what God tells us to do no matter what) is true, living faith. That is why God allows these demonic spirits that try to bring fear upon us to continue to operate in the earth, as it allows us to learn to **OVERCOME FEAR** and walk by **FAITH**. In this way God tests people to see if they will believe Him over the devil. **Anything that is not of faith is a sin.** In the economy of the kingdom of heaven, **faith** is the ‘currency’ that will get us whatever we need. The kingdom of heaven is not an actual place here on earth yet, (though it will be when the New Jerusalem comes to earth) but currently it is ‘within us’, (see Matthew 10:28, Luke 17:20-21, Romans 14:23b and II Timothy 1:7).*

#### **Matthew 10:28 -**

<sup>28</sup>“**And do not fear those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul. But rather fear Him who is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.**”<sup>126</sup>

#### **Luke 17:20-21 -**

<sup>20</sup>Now when He was asked by the Pharisees when the kingdom of God would come, He answered them and said, **“The kingdom of God does not come with observation;** <sup>21</sup>“nor

---

<sup>124</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.*

<sup>125</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.*

<sup>126</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.*



will they say, ‘See here!’ or ‘See there!’ **For indeed, the kingdom of God is within you.**”<sup>127</sup>

### Romans 14:23b -

<sup>23</sup>...for **whatever is not from faith is sin.**<sup>128</sup>

### II Timothy 1:7 -

<sup>7</sup>For **God has not given us a spirit of fear**, but of power and of love and of a sound mind.<sup>129</sup>

*In order for us to ‘operate’ effectively within God’s kingdom now, (and forever) we need to have faith. **Faith is simply acknowledging the truth of God, taking Him at His Word and acting accordingly.** The word faith occurs twice in the Old Testament and some 243 times in the New Testament, (KJV). Therefore, it is clearly a Word for the new covenant through Jesus. Faith in God through Jesus is how we get saved and how we do the will of God the Father. One of the Hebrew words from the Old Testament that is interpreted into English as ‘faith’ is the word **êmuwn**, (Strong’s **529**, pronounced - ay-moon’) and it means ‘truth’. Thus, **faith is truth.** If God says it, then it **WILL** come to pass...**PERIOD!** Therefore we can trust and rely on God’s Word, because it does not change. Thus as we said above, ‘living faith’ is to believe God and do what He says quickly. If people hear what God says, but do not act accordingly, that faith is ‘dead’ and will **NOT** save them. **True faith involves righteous, obedient action with God’s help through Jesus and the Holy Spirit,** (see the teaching, ‘Faith is Truth’, Hebrews 6:1 above, John 6:28-29, Romans 10:5-15, Hebrews chapter 11, James 1:2-8 and 2:14-26).*

529. ..אמונה]

**êmuwn**, ay-moon’; from 539; established, i.e. (fig.) trusty; also (abstr.) trustworthiness:— faith (-ful), truth.<sup>130</sup>

### John 6:28-29 -

<sup>28</sup>Then they said to Him, “What shall we do, that we may work the works of God?”

<sup>29</sup>Jesus answered and said to them, **“This is the work of God, that you believe in Him whom He sent.”**<sup>131</sup>

<sup>127</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>128</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>129</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>130</sup>James Strong, *New Strong’s dictionary of Hebrew and Greek words [computer file], electronic ed., Logos Library System*, (Nashville: Thomas Nelson) 1997, c1996.

**Romans 10:5-15 -**

<sup>5</sup>For Moses writes about the righteousness which is of the law, “The man who does those things shall live by them.” <sup>6</sup>But the righteousness of faith speaks in this way, “Do not say in your heart, ‘Who will ascend into heaven?’ ” (that is, to bring Christ down *from above*) <sup>7</sup>or, “ ‘Who will descend into the abyss?’ ” (that is, to bring Christ up from the dead). <sup>8</sup>**But what does it say? “The word is near you, in your mouth and in your heart” (that is, the word of faith which we preach): <sup>9</sup>that if you confess with your mouth the Lord Jesus and believe in your heart that God has raised Him from the dead, you will be saved. <sup>10</sup>For with the heart one believes unto righteousness, and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation. <sup>11</sup>For the Scripture says, “Whoever believes on Him will not be put to shame.” <sup>12</sup>For there is no distinction between Jew and Greek, for the same Lord over all is rich to all who call upon Him. <sup>13</sup>For “whoever calls on the name of the LORD shall be saved.”**

<sup>14</sup>How then shall they call on Him in whom they have not believed? And how shall they believe in Him of whom they have not heard? And how shall they hear without a preacher? <sup>15</sup>And how shall they preach unless they are sent? As it is written:

“How beautiful are the feet of those who preach the gospel of peace,  
Who bring glad tidings of good things!”<sup>132</sup>

**Hebrews Chapter 11 -****Chapter 11**

<sup>1</sup>Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. <sup>2</sup>For by it the elders obtained a *good* testimony. <sup>3</sup>By faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that the things which are seen were not made of things which are visible.

<sup>4</sup>By faith Abel offered to God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, through which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts; and through it he being dead still speaks. <sup>5</sup>By faith Enoch was taken away so that he did not see death, “and was not found, because God had taken him”; for before he was taken he had this testimony, that he pleased God. <sup>6</sup>**But without faith *it is impossible to please Him, for he who comes to God must believe that He is, and that He is a rewarder of those who diligently seek Him.*** <sup>7</sup>By faith Noah, being divinely warned of things not yet seen, moved with godly fear, prepared an ark for the saving of his household, by which he condemned the world and became heir of the righteousness which is according to faith.

<sup>8</sup>By faith Abraham obeyed when he was called to go out to the place which he would receive as an inheritance. And he went out, not knowing where he was going. <sup>9</sup>By faith he dwelt in the land of promise as *in* a foreign country, dwelling in tents with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise; <sup>10</sup>for he waited for the city which has

---

131 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

132 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

foundations, whose builder and maker *is* God. <sup>11</sup>By faith Sarah herself also received strength to conceive seed, and she bore a child when she was past the age, because she judged Him faithful who had promised. <sup>12</sup>Therefore from one man, and him as good as dead, were born *as many* as the stars of the sky in multitude—innumerable as the sand which is by the seashore.

<sup>13</sup>These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off were assured of them, embraced *them* and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth. <sup>14</sup>For those who say such things declare plainly that they seek a homeland. <sup>15</sup>And truly if they had called to mind that *country* from which they had come out, they would have had opportunity to return. <sup>16</sup>But now they desire a better, that is, a heavenly *country*. Therefore God is not ashamed to be called their God, for He has prepared a city for them.

<sup>17</sup>By faith Abraham, when he was tested, offered up Isaac, and he who had received the promises offered up his only begotten *son*, <sup>18</sup>of whom it was said, “In Isaac your seed shall be called,” <sup>19</sup>concluding that God *was* able to raise *him* up, even from the dead, from which he also received him in a figurative sense. <sup>20</sup>By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau concerning things to come. <sup>21</sup>By faith Jacob, when he was dying, blessed each of the sons of Joseph, and worshiped, *leaning* on the top of his staff. <sup>22</sup>By faith Joseph, when he was dying, made mention of the departure of the children of Israel, and gave instructions concerning his bones.

<sup>23</sup>By faith Moses, when he was born, was hidden three months by his parents, because they saw *he was* a beautiful child; and they were not afraid of the king’s command. <sup>24</sup>By faith Moses, when he became of age, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh’s daughter, <sup>25</sup>choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God than to enjoy the passing pleasures of sin, <sup>26</sup>esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt; for he looked to the reward. <sup>27</sup>By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king; for he endured as seeing Him who is invisible. <sup>28</sup>By faith he kept the Passover and the sprinkling of blood, lest he who destroyed the firstborn should touch them. <sup>29</sup>By faith they passed through the Red Sea as by dry *land*, *whereas* the Egyptians, attempting *to do so*, were drowned.

<sup>30</sup>By faith the walls of Jericho fell down after they were encircled for seven days. <sup>31</sup>By faith the harlot Rahab did not perish with those who did not believe, when she had received the spies with peace. <sup>32</sup>And what more shall I say? For the time would fail me to tell of Gideon and Barak and Samson and Jephthah, also *of* David and Samuel and the prophets: <sup>33</sup>who through faith subdued kingdoms, worked righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions, <sup>34</sup>quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, became valiant in battle, turned to flight the armies of the aliens. <sup>35</sup>Women received their dead raised to life again. And others were tortured, not accepting deliverance, that they might obtain a better resurrection. <sup>36</sup>Still others had trial of mockings and scourgings, yes, and of chains and imprisonment. <sup>37</sup>They were stoned, they were sawn in two, were tempted, were slain with the sword. They wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins, being destitute, afflicted, tormented—<sup>38</sup>of whom the world was not worthy. They wandered in deserts and mountains, *in dens* and caves of the earth. <sup>39</sup>**And all these, having obtained a good testimony through**

**faith, did not receive the promise, <sup>40</sup>God having provided something better for us, that they should not be made perfect apart from us.133**

**James 1:2-8 -**

<sup>2</sup>My brethren, count it all joy when you fall into various trials, <sup>3</sup>knowing that the testing of your faith produces patience. <sup>4</sup>But let patience have *its* perfect work, that you may be perfect and complete, lacking nothing. <sup>5</sup>If any of you lacks wisdom, let him ask of God, who gives to all liberally and without reproach, and it will be given to him. **<sup>6</sup>But let him ask in faith, with no doubting, for he who doubts is like a wave of the sea driven and tossed by the wind. <sup>7</sup>For let not that man suppose that he will receive anything from the Lord; <sup>8</sup>he is a double-minded man, unstable in all his ways.134**

**James 2:14-26 -**

<sup>14</sup>What *does it* profit, my brethren, if someone says he has faith but does not have works? Can faith save him? <sup>15</sup>If a brother or sister is naked and destitute of daily food, <sup>16</sup>and one of you says to them, “Depart in peace, be warmed and filled,” but you do not give them the things which are needed for the body, what *does it* profit? <sup>17</sup>Thus also faith by itself, if it does not have works, is dead. <sup>18</sup>But someone will say, “You have faith, and I have works.” Show me your faith without your works, and I will show you my faith by my works. <sup>19</sup>You believe that there is one God. You do well. Even the demons believe—and tremble! **<sup>20</sup>But do you want to know, O foolish man, that faith without works is dead? <sup>21</sup>Was not Abraham our father justified by works when he offered Isaac his son on the altar? <sup>22</sup>Do you see that faith was working together with his works, and by works faith was made perfect? <sup>23</sup>And the Scripture was fulfilled which says, “Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness.” And he was called the friend of God. <sup>24</sup>You see then that a man is justified by works, and not by faith only. <sup>25</sup>Likewise, was not Rahab the harlot also justified by works when she received the messengers and sent *them* out another way? <sup>26</sup>For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.135**

*Operating in fear or faith then is a decision that we make. We choose to believe God and obey Him in order to show our LOVE for Him and through this our LOVE for others, (faith) or people choose to disobey Him because they esteem something or someone more highly than they esteem God, (fear). The latter is actually rooted in pride, in the belief that the person knows better than God and it shows HATRED for God and His ways. Through this unbelief, hardness of heart and fear, these people will eventually also show their HATRED and HOSTILITY toward people who are made in the image of God. This*

---

133*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

134*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

135*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

*is the type of bitter unbelief that will invariably lead to destruction and death. Bitterness stemming from unbelief, fear and envy is very contagious. It will affect many people if it is allowed to operate in the church. Unbelief leads to a hardened heart and from there disobedience and sin. We are called to reject and remove from the church those who decide to unrepentantly operate in fear and unbelief within the church. The wisdom from above that comes from God would tell us to obey the Holy Spirit. The wisdom of the world, (which ultimately comes from Satan) would tell us to walk in fear of everything EXCEPT God. We must decide which wisdom that we will operate in. **If we choose to operate in the wisdom of God, then we must fear Him and Him alone, otherwise He will NOT give us His wisdom, understanding or knowledge.** Mostly what it boils down to is the way that we speak and how we treat others. If we fear God and obey Him, then we will treat everyone, (including our enemies) with respect and then He will take good care of us. **Whatever a person fears will come upon him, whether of God or evil,** (see Psalm chapter 49, Proverbs chapters 15-16, Matthew 5:43-48, John 14:15, I Corinthians 5:9-13, James chapter 3 above, Job 3:25, Psalm 2:10-12, 19:9-14, chapter 23, 25:12-14, 27:1-5, 31:9-24, 33:8-19, chapter 34, 46:1-3, 56:3-4, 85:8-9, 103:8-18, 111:10, 115:10-15, 118:4-6, 147:11, Proverbs 1:7, Vv. 20-2:22, chapters 8-10, 14, 19, 22:1-21, 23:12-28, Matthew 7:12, Matthew 18:15-20 and Hebrews 12:14-17).*

### **Job 3:25 -**

<sup>25</sup>           **For the thing I greatly feared has come upon me,**  
And what I dreaded has happened to me.<sup>136</sup>

### **Psalm 2:10-12 -**

<sup>10</sup>           Now therefore, be wise, O kings;  
Be instructed, you judges of the earth.  
<sup>11</sup>           **Serve the LORD with fear,**  
**And rejoice with trembling.**  
<sup>12</sup>           **Kiss the Son, lest He be angry,**  
**And you perish in the way,**  
**When His wrath is kindled but a little.**  
Blessed *are* all those who put their trust in Him.<sup>137</sup>

### **Psalm 19:9-14 -**

<sup>9</sup>           **The fear of the LORD is clean, enduring forever;**  
**The judgments of the LORD are true and righteous altogether.**  
<sup>10</sup>           **More to be desired are they than gold,**  
**Yea, than much fine gold;**

---

<sup>136</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.*

<sup>137</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.*

**Sweeter also than honey and the honeycomb.**

- 11        Moreover by them Your servant is warned,  
*And* in keeping them *there is* great reward.
- 12        Who can understand *his* errors?  
 Cleanse me from secret *faults*.
- 13        Keep back Your servant also from presumptuous *sins*;  
 Let them not have dominion over me.  
 Then I shall be blameless,  
 And I shall be innocent of great transgression.
- 14        Let the words of my mouth and the meditation of my heart  
 Be acceptable in Your sight,  
 O LORD, my strength and my Redeemer. 138

**Psalm Chapter 23 -****Psalm 23**

A Psalm of David.

- 1        The LORD *is* my shepherd;  
 I shall not want.
- 2        He makes me to lie down in green pastures;  
 He leads me beside the still waters.
- 3        He restores my soul;  
 He leads me in the paths of righteousness  
 For His name's sake.
- 4        Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death,  
**I will fear no evil;**  
**For You *are* with me;**  
 Your rod and Your staff, they comfort me.
- 5        You prepare a table before me in the presence of my enemies;  
 You anoint my head with oil;  
 My cup runs over.
- 6        Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me  
 All the days of my life;  
 And I will dwell in the house of the LORD Forever. 139

**Psalm 25:12-14 -**

- 12        Who *is* the man that fears the LORD?  
 Him shall He teach in the way He chooses.
- 13        He himself shall dwell in prosperity,  
 And his descendants shall inherit the earth.

---

138 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

139 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

**14           The secret of the LORD is with those who fear Him,  
And He will show them His covenant.<sup>140</sup>**

**Psalm 27:1-5 -**

**1           The LORD is my light and my salvation;  
Whom shall I fear?  
The LORD is the strength of my life;  
Of whom shall I be afraid?**

**2           When the wicked came against me  
To eat up my flesh,  
My enemies and foes,  
They stumbled and fell.**

**3           Though an army may encamp against me,  
My heart shall not fear;  
Though war should rise against me,  
In this I will be confident.**

**4           One thing I have desired of the LORD,  
That will I seek:  
That I may dwell in the house of the LORD  
All the days of my life,  
To behold the beauty of the LORD,  
And to inquire in His temple.**

**5           For in the time of trouble  
He shall hide me in His pavilion;  
In the secret place of His tabernacle  
He shall hide me;  
He shall set me high upon a rock.<sup>141</sup>**

**Psalm 31:9-24 -**

**9           Have mercy on me, O LORD, for I am in trouble;  
My eye wastes away with grief,  
Yes, my soul and my body!**

**10          For my life is spent with grief,  
And my years with sighing;  
My strength fails because of my iniquity,  
And my bones waste away.**

**11          I am a reproach among all my enemies,  
But especially among my neighbors,  
And am repulsive to my acquaintances;**

---

<sup>140</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>141</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

**Those who see me outside flee from me.**  
 12 **I am forgotten like a dead man, out of mind;**  
**I am like a broken vessel.**  
 13 **For I hear the slander of many;**  
**Fear *is* on every side;**  
**While they take counsel together against me,**  
**They scheme to take away my life.**  
 14 **But as for me, I trust in You, O LORD;**  
**I say, “You *are* my God.”**  
 15 **My times *are* in Your hand;**  
**Deliver me from the hand of my enemies,**  
**And from those who persecute me.**  
 16 **Make Your face shine upon Your servant;**  
**Save me for Your mercies’ sake.**  
 17 Do not let me be ashamed, O LORD, for I have called upon You;  
 Let the wicked be ashamed;  
 Let them be silent in the grave.  
 18 Let the lying lips be put to silence,  
 Which speak insolent things proudly and contemptuously against the righteous.  
 19 Oh, how great *is* Your goodness,  
 Which You have laid up for those who fear You,  
*Which* You have prepared for those who trust in You  
 In the presence of the sons of men!  
 20 You shall hide them in the secret place of Your presence  
 From the plots of man;  
 You shall keep them secretly in a pavilion  
 From the strife of tongues.  
 21 Blessed *be* the LORD,  
 For He has shown me His marvelous kindness in a strong city!  
 22 For I said in my haste,  
 “I am cut off from before Your eyes”;  
 Nevertheless You heard the voice of my supplications  
 When I cried out to You.  
 23 Oh, love the LORD, all you His saints!  
*For* the LORD preserves the faithful,  
 And fully repays the proud person.  
 24 Be of good courage,  
 And He shall strengthen your heart,  
 All you who hope in the LORD.<sup>142</sup>

**Psalm 33:8-19 -**

8 **Let all the earth fear the LORD;**

---

<sup>142</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.



**Let all the inhabitants of the world stand in awe of Him.**  
 9       **For He spoke, and it was *done*;**  
**He commanded, and it stood fast.**  
 10       **The LORD brings the counsel of the nations to nothing;**  
**He makes the plans of the peoples of no effect.**  
 11       **The counsel of the LORD stands forever,**  
**The plans of His heart to all generations.**  
 12       Blessed *is* the nation whose God *is* the LORD,  
 The people He has chosen as His own inheritance.  
 13       The LORD looks from heaven;  
 He sees all the sons of men.  
 14       From the place of His dwelling He looks  
 On all the inhabitants of the earth;  
 15       He fashions their hearts individually;  
 He considers all their works.  
 16       No king *is* saved by the multitude of an army;  
 A mighty man is not delivered by great strength.  
 17       A horse *is* a vain hope for safety;  
 Neither shall it deliver *any* by its great strength.  
 18       **Behold, the eye of the LORD *is* on those who fear Him,**  
**On those who hope in His mercy,**  
 19       **To deliver their soul from death,**  
**And to keep them alive in famine.<sup>143</sup>**

### Psalm Chapter 34 -

#### Psalm 34

A Psalm of David when he pretended madness before Abimelech, who drove him away, and he departed.

1       **I will bless the LORD at all times;**  
**His praise *shall* continually *be* in my mouth.**  
 2       **My soul shall make its boast in the LORD;**  
**The humble shall hear *of it* and be glad.**  
 3       **Oh, magnify the LORD with me,**  
**And let us exalt His name together.**  
 4       **I sought the LORD, and He heard me,**  
**And delivered me from all my fears.**  
 5       **They looked to Him and were radiant,**  
**And their faces were not ashamed.**  
 6       **This poor man cried out, and the LORD heard *him*,**  
**And saved him out of all his troubles.**  
 7       **The angel of the LORD encamps all around those who fear Him,**  
**And delivers them.**

---

<sup>143</sup>The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

8           **Oh, taste and see that the LORD *is* good;**  
           **Blessed *is* the man *who* trusts in Him!**  
 9           **Oh, fear the LORD, you His saints!**  
           ***There is* no want to those who fear Him.**  
 10          **The young lions lack and suffer hunger;**  
           **But those who seek the LORD shall not lack any good *thing*.**  
 11          **Come, you children, listen to me;**  
           **I will teach you the fear of the LORD.**  
 12          **Who *is* the man *who* desires life,**  
           **And loves *many* days, that he may see good?**  
 13          **Keep your tongue from evil,**  
           **And your lips from speaking deceit.**  
 14          **Depart from evil and do good;**  
           **Seek peace and pursue it.**  
 15          **The eyes of the LORD *are* on the righteous,**  
           **And His ears *are open* to their cry.**  
 16          **The face of the LORD *is* against those who do evil,**  
           **To cut off the remembrance of them from the earth.**  
 17          ***The righteous* cry out, and the LORD hears,**  
           **And delivers them out of all their troubles.**  
 18          **The LORD *is* near to those who have a broken heart,**  
           **And saves such as have a contrite spirit.**  
 19          **Many *are* the afflictions of the righteous,**  
           **But the LORD delivers him out of them all.**  
 20          **He guards all his bones;**  
           **Not one of them is broken.**  
 21          Evil shall slay the wicked,  
           And those who hate the righteous shall be condemned.  
 22          The LORD redeems the soul of His servants,  
 And none of those who trust in Him shall be condemned. 144

### Psalm 46:1-3 -

1           God *is* our refuge and strength,  
           A very present help in trouble.  
 2           **Therefore we will not fear,**  
           Even though the earth be removed,  
           And though the mountains be carried into the midst of the sea;  
 3           ***Though* its waters roar *and* be troubled,**  
           ***Though* the mountains shake with its swelling. Selah** 145

---

144 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

145 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

**Psalm 56:3-4 -**

<sup>3</sup> Whenever I am afraid,  
I will trust in You.  
<sup>4</sup> In God (I will praise His word),  
**In God I have put my trust;  
I will not fear.**

What can flesh do to me?<sup>146</sup>

**Psalm 85:8-9 -**

<sup>8</sup> I will hear what God the LORD will speak,  
For He will speak peace  
To His people and to His saints;  
But let them not turn back to folly.  
<sup>9</sup> **Surely His salvation is near to those who fear Him,  
That glory may dwell in our land.**<sup>147</sup>

**Psalm 103:8-18 -**

<sup>8</sup> The LORD *is* merciful and gracious,  
Slow to anger, and abounding in mercy.  
<sup>9</sup> He will not always strive *with us*,  
Nor will He keep *His anger* forever.  
<sup>10</sup> He has not dealt with us according to our sins,  
Nor punished us according to our iniquities.  
<sup>11</sup> **For as the heavens are high above the earth,  
So great is His mercy toward those who fear Him;**  
<sup>12</sup> **As far as the east is from the west,  
So far has He removed our transgressions from us.**  
<sup>13</sup> **As a father pities *his* children,  
So the LORD pities those who fear Him.**  
<sup>14</sup> **For He knows our frame;  
He remembers that we *are* dust.**  
<sup>15</sup> **As for man, his days *are* like grass;  
As a flower of the field, so he flourishes.**  
<sup>16</sup> **For the wind passes over it, and it is gone,  
And its place remembers it no more.**  
<sup>17</sup> **But the mercy of the LORD *is* from everlasting to everlasting  
On those who fear Him,  
And His righteousness to children's children,**

---

<sup>146</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>147</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

18           **To such as keep His covenant,  
And to those who remember His commandments to do them.**148

**Psalm 111:10 -**

10           **The fear of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom;  
A good understanding have all those who do *His commandments*.**  
His praise endures forever.149

**Psalm 115:10-15 -**

10           O house of Aaron, trust in the LORD;  
He *is* their help and their shield.  
11           **You who fear the LORD, trust in the LORD;  
He is their help and their shield.**  
12           **The LORD has been mindful of us;  
He will bless us;  
He will bless the house of Israel;  
He will bless the house of Aaron.**  
13           **He will bless those who fear the LORD,  
*Both* small and great.**  
14           May the LORD give you increase more and more,  
You and your children.  
15           *May you be* blessed by the LORD,  
Who made heaven and earth.150

**Psalm 118:4-6 -**

4           **Let those who fear the LORD now say,  
“His mercy *endures* forever.”**  
5           I called on the LORD in distress;  
The LORD answered me *and set me* in a broad place.  
6           **The LORD is on my side;  
I will not fear.**  
What can man do to me?151

**Psalm 147:11 -**

---

148*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

149*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

150*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

151*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>11</sup> The LORD takes pleasure in those who fear Him,  
In those who hope in His mercy.<sup>152</sup>

**Proverbs 1:7 -**

<sup>7</sup> **The fear of the LORD is the beginning of knowledge,**  
*But* fools despise wisdom and instruction.<sup>153</sup>

**Proverbs 1:20-2:22 -**

<sup>20</sup> Wisdom calls aloud outside;  
She raises her voice in the open squares.  
<sup>21</sup> She cries out in the chief concourses,  
At the openings of the gates in the city  
She speaks her words:  
<sup>22</sup> “How long, you simple ones, will you love simplicity?  
For scorners delight in their scorning,  
And fools hate knowledge.  
<sup>23</sup> Turn at my rebuke;  
Surely I will pour out my spirit on you;  
I will make my words known to you.  
<sup>24</sup> Because I have called and you refused,  
I have stretched out my hand and no one regarded,  
<sup>25</sup> Because you disdained all my counsel,  
And would have none of my rebuke,  
<sup>26</sup> I also will laugh at your calamity;  
I will mock when your terror comes,  
<sup>27</sup> When your terror comes like a storm,  
And your destruction comes like a whirlwind,  
When distress and anguish come upon you.  
<sup>28</sup> “Then they will call on me, but I will not answer;  
They will seek me diligently, but they will not find me.  
<sup>29</sup> **Because they hated knowledge**  
**And did not choose the fear of the LORD,**  
<sup>30</sup> **They would have none of my counsel**  
**And despised my every rebuke.**  
<sup>31</sup> **Therefore they shall eat the fruit of their own way,**  
**And be filled to the full with their own fancies.**  
<sup>32</sup> **For the turning away of the simple will slay them,**  
**And the complacency of fools will destroy them;**

---

<sup>152</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>153</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

33       **But whoever listens to me will dwell safely,  
And will be secure, without fear of evil.”**

## Chapter 2

1       My son, if you receive my words,  
And treasure my commands within you,  
2       **So that you incline your ear to wisdom,  
And apply your heart to understanding;**  
3       **Yes, if you cry out for discernment,  
And lift up your voice for understanding,**  
4       **If you seek her as silver,  
And search for her as *for* hidden treasures;**  
5       **Then you will understand the fear of the LORD,  
And find the knowledge of God.**  
6       **For the LORD gives wisdom;  
From His mouth *come* knowledge and understanding;**  
7       **He stores up sound wisdom for the upright;  
*He is* a shield to those who walk uprightly;**  
8       **He guards the paths of justice,  
And preserves the way of His saints.**  
9       **Then you will understand righteousness and justice,  
Equity *and* every good path.**  
10       **When wisdom enters your heart,  
And knowledge is pleasant to your soul,  
11       Discretion will preserve you;  
Understanding will keep you,  
12       To deliver you from the way of evil,**  
From the man who speaks perverse things,  
13       From those who leave the paths of uprightness  
To walk in the ways of darkness;  
14       Who rejoice in doing evil,  
And delight in the perversity of the wicked;  
15       Whose ways *are* crooked,  
And *who are* devious in their paths;  
16       To deliver you from the immoral woman,  
From the seductress *who* flatters with her words,  
17       Who forsakes the companion of her youth,  
And forgets the covenant of her God.  
18       For her house leads down to death,  
And her paths to the dead;  
19       None who go to her return,  
Nor do they regain the paths of life—  
20       So you may walk in the way of goodness,  
And keep *to* the paths of righteousness.  
21       For the upright will dwell in the land,  
And the blameless will remain in it;

22           But the wicked will be cut off from the earth,  
And the unfaithful will be uprooted from it.<sup>154</sup>

## Proverbs Chapters 8-10 -

### Chapter 8

1           Does not wisdom cry out,  
And understanding lift up her voice?  
2           She takes her stand on the top of the high hill,  
Beside the way, where the paths meet.  
3           She cries out by the gates, at the entry of the city,  
At the entrance of the doors:  
4           “To you, O men, I call,  
And my voice *is* to the sons of men.  
5           O you simple ones, understand prudence,  
And you fools, be of an understanding heart.  
6           Listen, for I will speak of excellent things,  
And from the opening of my lips *will come* right things;  
7           For my mouth will speak truth;  
Wickedness *is* an abomination to my lips.  
8           **All the words of my mouth *are* with righteousness;  
Nothing crooked or perverse *is* in them.**  
9           **They *are* all plain to him who understands,  
And right to those who find knowledge.**  
10          **Receive my instruction, and not silver,  
And knowledge rather than choice gold;**  
11          **For wisdom *is* better than rubies,  
And all the things one may desire cannot be compared with her.**  
12          **“I, wisdom, dwell with prudence,  
And find out knowledge *and* discretion.**  
13          **The fear of the LORD *is* to hate evil;  
Pride and arrogance and the evil way  
And the perverse mouth I hate.**  
14          **Counsel *is* mine, and sound wisdom;  
I *am* understanding, I have strength.**  
15          **By me kings reign,  
And rulers decree justice.**  
16          **By me princes rule, and nobles,  
All the judges of the earth.**  
17          **I love those who love me,  
And those who seek me diligently will find me.**  
18          **Riches and honor *are* with me,  
Enduring riches and righteousness.**

---

<sup>154</sup>The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

19       **My fruit is better than gold, yes, than fine gold,**  
20       **And my revenue than choice silver.**  
21       **I traverse the way of righteousness,**  
22       **In the midst of the paths of justice,**  
23       **That I may cause those who love me to inherit wealth,**  
24       **That I may fill their treasuries.**  
25       “The LORD possessed me at the beginning of His way,  
26       Before His works of old.  
27       I have been established from everlasting,  
28       From the beginning, before there was ever an earth.  
29       When *there were* no depths I was brought forth,  
30       When *there were* no fountains abounding with water.  
31       Before the mountains were settled,  
32       Before the hills, I was brought forth;  
33       While as yet He had not made the earth or the fields,  
34       Or the primeval dust of the world.  
35       When He prepared the heavens, I *was* there,  
36       When He drew a circle on the face of the deep,  
37       When He established the clouds above,  
38       When He strengthened the fountains of the deep,  
39       When He assigned to the sea its limit,  
40       So that the waters would not transgress His command,  
41       When He marked out the foundations of the earth,  
42       Then I was beside Him *as* a master craftsman;  
43       And I was daily *His* delight,  
44       Rejoicing always before Him,  
45       Rejoicing in His inhabited world,  
46       And my delight *was* with the sons of men.  
47       “**Now therefore, listen to me, *my children,***  
48       **For blessed *are those who* keep my ways.**  
49       **Hear instruction and be wise,**  
50       **And do not disdain *it.***  
51       **Blessed is the man who listens to me,**  
52       **Watching daily at my gates,**  
53       **Waiting at the posts of my doors.**  
54       **For whoever finds me finds life,**  
55       **And obtains favor from the LORD;**  
56       **But he who sins against me wrongs his own soul;**  
57       **All those who hate me love death.”**

## Chapter 9

1       Wisdom has built her house,  
2       She has hewn out her seven pillars;  
3       She has slaughtered her meat,  
4       She has mixed her wine,  
5       She has also furnished her table.



3           She has sent out her maidens,  
She cries out from the highest places of the city,  
4           “Whoever *is* simple, let him turn in here!”  
*As for* him who lacks understanding, she says to him,  
5           “Come, eat of my bread  
And drink of the wine I have mixed.  
6           Forsake foolishness and live,  
And go in the way of understanding.  
7           “He who corrects a scoffer gets shame for himself,  
And he who rebukes a wicked *man only* harms himself.  
8           **Do not correct a scoffer, lest he hate you;  
Rebuke a wise *man*, and he will love you.  
9           Give *instruction* to a wise *man*, and he will be still wiser;  
Teach a just *man*, and he will increase in learning.**  
10           **“The fear of the LORD *is* the beginning of wisdom,  
And the knowledge of the Holy One *is* understanding.**  
11           **For by me your days will be multiplied,  
And years of life will be added to you.**  
12           **If you are wise, you are wise for yourself,  
And *if* you scoff, you will bear *it* alone.”**  
13           A foolish woman is clamorous;  
*She is* simple, and knows nothing.  
14           For she sits at the door of her house,  
On a seat *by* the highest places of the city,  
15           To call to those who pass by,  
Who go straight on their way:  
16           “Whoever *is* simple, let him turn in here”;  
And *as for* him who lacks understanding, she says to him,  
17           “Stolen water is sweet,  
And bread *eaten* in secret is pleasant.”  
18           But he does not know that the dead *are* there,  
*That* her guests *are* in the depths of hell.

## Chapter 10

1           The Proverbs of Solomon:  
A wise son makes a glad father,  
But a foolish son *is* the grief of his mother.  
2           Treasures of wickedness profit nothing,  
But righteousness delivers from death.  
3           The LORD will not allow the righteous soul to famish,  
But He casts away the desire of the wicked.  
4           He who has a slack hand becomes poor,  
But the hand of the diligent makes rich.  
5           He who gathers in summer *is* a wise son;  
He who sleeps in harvest *is* a son who causes shame.

6 Blessings *are* on the head of the righteous,  
But violence covers the mouth of the wicked.  
7 **The memory of the righteous *is* blessed,  
But the name of the wicked will rot.**  
8 **The wise in heart will receive commands,  
But a prating fool will fall.**  
9 **He who walks with integrity walks securely,  
But he who perverts his ways will become known.**  
10 **He who winks with the eye causes trouble,  
But a prating fool will fall.**  
11 **The mouth of the righteous *is* a well of life,  
But violence covers the mouth of the wicked.**  
12 **Hatred stirs up strife,  
But love covers all sins.**  
13 **Wisdom is found on the lips of him who has understanding,  
But a rod *is* for the back of him who is devoid of understanding.**  
14 **Wise *people* store up knowledge,  
But the mouth of the foolish *is* near destruction.**  
15 **The rich man's wealth *is* his strong city;  
The destruction of the poor *is* their poverty.**  
16 **The labor of the righteous *leads* to life,  
The wages of the wicked to sin.**  
17 **He who keeps instruction *is in* the way of life,  
But he who refuses correction goes astray.**  
18 **Whoever hides hatred *has* lying lips,  
And whoever spreads slander *is* a fool.**  
19 **In the multitude of words sin is not lacking,  
But he who restrains his lips *is* wise.**  
20 **The tongue of the righteous *is* choice silver;  
The heart of the wicked *is worth* little.**  
21 **The lips of the righteous feed many,  
But fools die for lack of wisdom.**  
22 **The blessing of the LORD makes *one* rich,  
And He adds no sorrow with it.**  
23 **To do evil *is* like sport to a fool,  
But a man of understanding has wisdom.**  
24 **The fear of the wicked will come upon him,  
And the desire of the righteous will be granted.**  
25 **When the whirlwind passes by, the wicked *is no more*,  
But the righteous *has* an everlasting foundation.**  
26 **As vinegar to the teeth and smoke to the eyes,  
So *is* the lazy *man* to those who send him.**  
27 **The fear of the LORD prolongs days,  
But the years of the wicked will be shortened.**

28       **The hope of the righteous *will be* gladness,  
But the expectation of the wicked will perish.**  
29       **The way of the LORD *is* strength for the upright,  
But destruction *will come* to the workers of iniquity.**  
30       **The righteous will never be removed,  
But the wicked will not inhabit the earth.**  
31       **The mouth of the righteous brings forth wisdom,  
But the perverse tongue will be cut out.**  
32       **The lips of the righteous know what is acceptable,  
But the mouth of the wicked *what is* perverse.<sup>155</sup>**

## Proverbs Chapter 14 -

### Chapter 14

1       **The wise woman builds her house,  
But the foolish pulls it down with her hands.**  
2       **He who walks in his uprightness fears the LORD,  
But *he who is* perverse in his ways despises Him.**  
3       **In the mouth of a fool *is* a rod of pride,  
But the lips of the wise will preserve them.**  
4       Where no oxen *are*, the trough *is* clean;  
But much increase *comes* by the strength of an ox.  
5       A faithful witness does not lie,  
But a false witness will utter lies.  
6       **A scoffer seeks wisdom and does not *find it*,  
But knowledge *is* easy to him who understands.**  
7       **Go from the presence of a foolish man,  
When you do not perceive *in him* the lips of knowledge.**  
8       **The wisdom of the prudent *is* to understand his way,  
But the folly of fools *is* deceit.**  
9       **Fools mock at sin,  
But among the upright *there is* favor.**  
10       **The heart knows its own bitterness,  
And a stranger does not share its joy.**  
11       **The house of the wicked will be overthrown,  
But the tent of the upright will flourish.**  
12       **There is a way *that seems* right to a man,  
But its end *is* the way of death.**  
13       **Even in laughter the heart may sorrow,  
And the end of mirth *may be* grief.**  
14       **The backslider in heart will be filled with his own ways,  
But a good man *will be satisfied* from above.**

---

<sup>155</sup>The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

15       The simple believes every word,  
But the prudent considers well his steps.  
16       A wise *man* fears and departs from evil,  
But a fool rages and is self-confident.  
17       A quick-tempered *man* acts foolishly,  
And a man of wicked intentions is hated.  
18       The simple inherit folly,  
But the prudent are crowned with knowledge.  
19       The evil will bow before the good,  
And the wicked at the gates of the righteous.  
20       The poor *man* is hated even by his own neighbor,  
But the rich *has* many friends.  
21       He who despises his neighbor sins;  
But he who has mercy on the poor, happy *is* he.  
22       Do they not go astray who devise evil?  
But mercy and truth *belong* to those who devise good.  
23       In all labor there is profit,  
But idle chatter *leads* only to poverty.  
24       The crown of the wise is their riches,  
*But* the foolishness of fools *is* folly.  
25       A true witness delivers souls,  
But a deceitful *witness* speaks lies.  
26       **In the fear of the LORD *there is* strong confidence,  
And His children will have a place of refuge.**  
27       **The fear of the LORD *is* a fountain of life,  
To turn *one* away from the snares of death.**  
28       In a multitude of people *is* a king's honor,  
But in the lack of people *is* the downfall of a prince.  
29       ***He who is* slow to wrath has great understanding,  
But *he who is* impulsive exalts folly.**  
30       **A sound heart *is* life to the body,  
But envy *is* rottenness to the bones.**  
31       **He who oppresses the poor reproaches his Maker,  
But he who honors Him has mercy on the needy.**  
32       **The wicked is banished in his wickedness,  
But the righteous has a refuge in his death.**  
33       **Wisdom rests in the heart of him who has understanding,  
But *what is* in the heart of fools is made known.**  
34       **Righteousness exalts a nation,  
But sin *is* a reproach to *any* people.**  
35       The king's favor *is* toward a wise servant,  
But his wrath *is against* him who causes shame. 156

**Proverbs Chapter 19 -****Chapter 19**

1 Better *is* the poor who walks in his integrity  
Than *one who is* perverse in his lips, and is a fool.

2 **Also it is not good for a soul to be without knowledge,  
And he sins who hastens with his feet.**

3 The foolishness of a man twists his way,  
And his heart frets against the LORD.

4 Wealth makes many friends,  
But the poor is separated from his friend.

5 A false witness will not go unpunished,  
And *he who* speaks lies will not escape.

6 Many entreat the favor of the nobility,  
And every man *is* a friend to one who gives gifts.

7 All the brothers of the poor hate him;  
How much more do his friends go far from him!  
He may pursue *them with* words, *yet* they abandon *him*.

8 **He who gets wisdom loves his own soul;  
He who keeps understanding will find good.**

9 **A false witness will not go unpunished,  
And he who speaks lies shall perish.**

10 Luxury is not fitting for a fool,  
Much less for a servant to rule over princes.

11 The discretion of a man makes him slow to anger,  
And his glory *is* to overlook a transgression.

12 The king's wrath *is* like the roaring of a lion,  
But his favor *is* like dew on the grass.

13 A foolish son *is* the ruin of his father,  
And the contentions of a wife *are* a continual dripping.

14 Houses and riches *are* an inheritance from fathers,  
But a prudent wife *is* from the LORD.

15 Laziness casts *one* into a deep sleep,  
And an idle person will suffer hunger.

16 He who keeps the commandment keeps his soul,  
*But* he who is careless of his ways will die.

17 He who has pity on the poor lends to the LORD,  
And He will pay back what he has given.

18 Chasten your son while there is hope,  
And do not set your heart on his destruction.

19 *A man of* great wrath will suffer punishment;  
For if you rescue *him*, you will have to do it again.

20 **Listen to counsel and receive instruction,  
That you may be wise in your latter days.**

21 **There are many plans in a man's heart,  
Nevertheless the LORD's counsel—that will stand.**

22       **What is desired in a man is kindness,**  
 And a poor man is better than a liar.  
 23       **The fear of the LORD *leads* to life,**  
 And *he who has it* will abide in satisfaction;  
 He will not be visited with evil.  
 24       A lazy *man* buries his hand in the bowl,  
 And will not so much as bring it to his mouth again.  
 25       Strike a scoffer, and the simple will become wary;  
 Rebuke one who has understanding, *and* he will discern knowledge.  
 26       He who mistreats *his* father *and* chases away *his* mother  
 Is a son who causes shame and brings reproach.  
 27       **Cease listening to instruction, my son,**  
 And you will stray from the words of knowledge.  
 28       **A disreputable witness scorns justice,**  
 And the mouth of the wicked devours iniquity.  
 29       **Judgments are prepared for scoffers,**  
 And beatings for the backs of fools.<sup>157</sup>

Proverbs 22:1-21 -

1       **A *good* name is to be chosen rather than great riches,**  
 Loving favor rather than silver and gold.  
 2       **The rich and the poor have this in common,**  
 The LORD *is* the maker of them all.  
 3       **A prudent *man* foresees evil and hides himself,**  
 But the simple pass on and are punished.  
 4       **By humility *and* the fear of the LORD**  
*Are* riches and honor and life.  
 5       **Thorns *and* snares *are* in the way of the perverse;**  
 He who guards his soul will be far from them.  
 6       **Train up a child in the way he should go,**  
 And when he is old he will not depart from it.  
 7       **The rich rules over the poor,**  
 And the borrower *is* servant to the lender.  
 8       **He who sows iniquity will reap sorrow,**  
 And the rod of his anger will fail.  
 9       **He who has a generous eye will be blessed,**  
 For he gives of his bread to the poor.  
 10       **Cast out the scoffer, and contention will leave;**  
 Yes, strife and reproach will cease.  
 11       **He who loves purity of heart**  
*And has* grace on his lips,  
 The king *will be* his friend.

---

<sup>157</sup>The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

12       **The eyes of the LORD preserve knowledge,**  
 13       **But He overthrows the words of the faithless.**  
 13       The lazy *man* says, “*There is a lion outside!*  
 I shall be slain in the streets!”  
 14       The mouth of an immoral woman *is* a deep pit;  
 He who is abhorred by the LORD will fall there.  
 15       Foolishness *is* bound up in the heart of a child;  
 The rod of correction will drive it far from him.  
 16       **He who oppresses the poor to increase his riches,**  
**And he who gives to the rich, will surely come to poverty.**  
 17       **Incline your ear and hear the words of the wise,**  
**And apply your heart to my knowledge;**  
 18       **For *it is* a pleasant thing if you keep them within you;**  
**Let them all be fixed upon your lips,**  
 19       **So that your trust may be in the LORD;**  
**I have instructed you today, even you.**  
 20       **Have I not written to you excellent things**  
**Of counsels and knowledge,**  
 21       **That I may make you know the certainty of the words of truth,**  
**That you may answer words of truth**  
**To those who send to you? 158**

**Proverbs 23:12-28 -**

12       **Apply your heart to instruction,**  
**And your ears to words of knowledge.**  
 13       **Do not withhold correction from a child,**  
**For *if* you beat him with a rod, he will not die.**  
 14       **You shall beat him with a rod,**  
**And deliver his soul from hell.**  
 15       **My son, if your heart is wise,**  
**My heart will rejoice—indeed, I myself;**  
 16       **Yes, my inmost being will rejoice**  
**When your lips speak right things.**  
 17       **Do not let your heart envy sinners,**  
**But *be zealous* for the fear of the LORD all the day;**  
 18       **For surely there is a hereafter,**  
**And your hope will not be cut off.**  
 19       **Hear, my son, and be wise;**  
**And guide your heart in the way.**  
 20       **Do not mix with winebibbers,**  
**Or with gluttonous eaters of meat;**  
 21       **For the drunkard and the glutton will come to poverty,**

**And drowsiness will clothe a man with rags.**  
 22 Listen to your father who begot you,  
 And do not despise your mother when she is old.  
 23 **Buy the truth, and do not sell it,**  
**Also wisdom and instruction and understanding.**  
 24 The father of the righteous will greatly rejoice,  
 And he who begets a wise *child* will delight in him.  
 25 Let your father and your mother be glad,  
 And let her who bore you rejoice.  
 26 My son, give me your heart,  
 And let your eyes observe my ways.  
 27 For a harlot *is* a deep pit,  
 And a seductress *is* a narrow well.  
 28 She also lies in wait as *for* a victim,  
 And increases the unfaithful among men.<sup>159</sup>

#### Matthew 7:12 -

<sup>12</sup>“**Therefore, whatever you want men to do to you, do also to them,** for this is the Law and the Prophets.<sup>160</sup>”

#### Matthew 18:15-20 -

<sup>15</sup>“Moreover if your brother sins against you, go and tell him his fault between you and him alone. If he hears you, you have gained your brother. <sup>16</sup>“But if he will not hear, take with you one or two more, that ‘by the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established.’ <sup>17</sup>“And if he refuses to hear them, tell *it* to the church. **But if he refuses even to hear the church, let him be to you like a heathen and a tax collector.** <sup>18</sup>“Assuredly, I say to you, whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven. <sup>19</sup>“Again I say to you that if two of you agree on earth concerning anything that they ask, it will be done for them by My Father in heaven. <sup>20</sup>“For where two or three are gathered together in My name, I am there in the midst of them.”<sup>161</sup>”

#### Hebrews 12:14-17 -

<sup>14</sup>Try to live in peace with everyone, and seek to live a clean and holy life, for those who are not holy will not see the Lord. <sup>15</sup>Look after each other so that none of you will miss out on the special favor of God. **Watch out that no bitter root of unbelief rises up**

---

<sup>159</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>160</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>161</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.



**among you, for whenever it springs up, many are corrupted by its poison.** <sup>16</sup> Make sure that no one is immoral or godless like Esau. He traded his birthright as the oldest son for a single meal. <sup>17</sup> And afterward, when he wanted his father's blessing, he was rejected. It was too late for repentance, even though he wept bitter tears. <sup>162</sup>

*So we see then that obedient, living faith is necessary to please God and in order to receive anything from Him. Faith, (believing God and doing what He says) working in a humble heart will lead us into eternal life through Jesus Christ and will also open the door for us to well taken care of in this life and for eternity in the next life. In this life there will be tribulations, but Jesus has overcome those tribulations and through Him we can also **OVERCOME**. God instructs us **NOT** to give in to the spirit of fear, but to follow the lead of the Holy Spirit of God, who gives us power, love and a sound mind. Even discouragement is the same as fear, (i.e., dis or 'no' - courage = fear) and a sin in God's eyes. By the grace or power of God, we have to press through disparaging circumstances in order to overcome discouragement. Like David did when he faced Goliath, if we remember the good things that God has done for us in times past then we can encourage ourselves in times of trouble, even if others try to discourage us. This is how we overcome fear with faith. If people give in to fear and pride, they will follow the wide path to eternal destruction and will have more than their share of trouble in this life, (see Joshua 1:1-9 and I Samuel 17:31-37).*

#### **Joshua 1:1-9 -**

<sup>1</sup>After the death of Moses the servant of the LORD, it came to pass that the LORD spoke to Joshua the son of Nun, Moses' assistant, saying: <sup>2</sup>“Moses My servant is dead. Now therefore, arise, go over this Jordan, you and all this people, to the land which I am giving to them—the children of Israel. <sup>3</sup>“Every place that the sole of your foot will tread upon I have given you, as I said to Moses. <sup>4</sup>“From the wilderness and this Lebanon as far as the great river, the River Euphrates, all the land of the Hittites, and to the Great Sea toward the going down of the sun, shall be your territory. <sup>5</sup>“No man shall *be able to* stand before you all the days of your life; as I was with Moses, *so* I will be with you. I will not leave you nor forsake you. <sup>6</sup>“**Be strong and of good courage, for to this people you shall divide as an inheritance the land which I swore to their fathers to give them.** <sup>7</sup>“**Only be strong and very courageous, that you may observe to do according to all the law which Moses My servant commanded you; do not turn from it to the right hand or to the left, that you may prosper wherever you go.** <sup>8</sup>“**This Book of the Law shall not depart from your mouth, but you shall meditate in it day and night, that you may observe to do according to all that is written in it. For then you will make your way prosperous, and then you will have good success.** <sup>9</sup>“**Have I not commanded you? Be strong and of good courage; do not be afraid, nor be dismayed, for the LORD your God *is* with you wherever you go.”<sup>163</sup>**

---

<sup>162</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>163</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

### I Samuel 17:31-37 -

<sup>31</sup>Now when the words which David spoke were heard, they reported *them* to Saul; and he sent for him. <sup>32</sup>Then David said to Saul, “Let no man’s heart fail because of him; your servant will go and fight with this Philistine.” <sup>33</sup>And Saul said to David, “You are not able to go against this Philistine to fight with him; for you *are* a youth, and he a man of war from his youth.” <sup>34</sup>**But David said to Saul, “Your servant used to keep his father’s sheep, and when a lion or a bear came and took a lamb out of the flock, <sup>35</sup>I went out after it and struck it, and delivered *the lamb* from its mouth; and when it arose against me, I caught *it* by its beard, and struck and killed it. <sup>36</sup>“Your servant has killed both lion and bear; and this uncircumcised Philistine will be like one of them, seeing he has defied the armies of the living God.” <sup>37</sup>Moreover David said, “The LORD, who delivered me from the paw of the lion and from the paw of the bear, He will deliver me from the hand of this Philistine.”** And Saul said to David, “Go, and the LORD be with you!”<sup>164</sup>

#### 1. Confusion/Chaos vs. Order -

**The most important thing to God in the earth is ORDER.** *The Bible says in Genesis 1:1 that God created the heavens and the earth. Since God is not the author of confusion, then we must believe that when He created the heavens and the earth that He did so to perfection. The bible also says in Genesis 1:2 that the earth was, (or became) without form and void. The original Hebrew words that are translated as ‘without form’ and ‘void’ are tōhūw and bōhūw. These terms describe a state of CONFUSION, (or desolation) and CHAOS, (or ruin). The Hebrew word translated as ‘was’ in Genesis 1:2 may also be translated as ‘became’. Therefore, Genesis 1:2 describes the state of the earth after the fall of Lucifer. As we stated above, this event created the state of, desolation and darkness on the planet which was formerly a place of beauty under the rule of Lucifer before he rebelled against God. Some refer to the gap in time denoted by Genesis 1:1-2 as the ‘gap theory’. Though we do not have direct reference to this in the Bible, it may be inferred from the scriptures as laid out above. Through the Holy Spirit and Jesus, God then set about ‘recreating’ the surface of the planet after the fall of Lucifer. Thus, the entire plan of God in the earth for mankind from Adam to the New Jerusalem will be to ultimately create a ‘heaven on earth’ situation of perfect ORDER. In the process, there will be a great battle between the kingdom of light and the kingdom of darkness over the souls of people from whom God will choose the replacements for Lucifer and his fallen angels, (see Genesis 1:1-2, Isaiah 14:3-17, Ezekiel 28:11-19, Luke 10:18, John 12:31, Revelation 12:3-4, Vv. 7-9 and 20:1-21:8 above and I Corinthians 14:33).*

8414. תורה

---

<sup>164</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.*

**tôhûw**, *to'-hoo*; from an unused root mean. to lie *waste*; a *desolation* (of surface), i.e. *desert*; fig. a *worthless* thing; adv. in *vain*:— **confusion**, empty place, without form, nothing, (thing of) nought, vain, vanity, waste, wilderness.165

922. בְּהוּ

**bôhûw**, *bo'-hoo*; from an unused root (mean. to *be empty*); a *vacuity*, i.e. (superficially) an undistinguishable **ruin**:— emptiness, void.166

### I Corinthians 14:33 -

<sup>33</sup>For **God is not the author of confusion** but of peace, as in all the churches of the saints.167

*Though God is not the 'author' of confusion, He does bring confusion, disease and disaster upon those who rebel against Him. Thus, when Lucifer was cast out of heaven and thrown down to the earth, his character was changed from one of beauty and perfection to one of ugliness and confusion. I believe that God also 'scrambled' the minds of Satan and his followers so that they are always out of balance and unable to think clearly. This is one of the reasons that Satan carries on as he does, because in his twisted mind he still thinks that he can defeat God! Therefore, the heavenly wisdom that Lucifer had when he was God's covering archangel has now become an 'earthly' type, so that those who follow this earthly wisdom will end up in a state of confusion just like Satan. The wisdom of God from above that we can access through Jesus Christ will shed 'light' on our minds and hearts so that we can clearly 'see' what it is that God is doing in the earth, (see James 3:13-18 above). Unfortunately, most Christians are unclear and confused about some things relating to God, His Word and plan for mankind. They are in this state of confusion or lack of understanding because of the fact that earthly, human, (demonic) wisdom has been brought into God's church. Most people will not go to God directly and ask for wisdom, understanding and knowledge from above and then look for themselves into the Word regarding these matters. They would rather take the lazy way out and rely on the teachings of others, who may have also built their understanding on the error of their teachers and so on. Thus is propagated the error and confusion down through the ages from false teachings and 'doctrines of demons' being established in God's church. Therefore, the modern church at large and most Christians around the world suffer far more than necessary from sickness, financial turmoil and stressful events which come as a result of following these wrong teachings that lead them to live their lives in a state of disorder. God punishes His people for this type of error and those who openly rebel will, (like Satan and his demons) live in a constant state of confusion and fear, suffering one disaster and sickness after another. These sicknesses and disasters*

---

165James Strong, *New Strong's dictionary of Hebrew and Greek words [computer file]*, electronic ed., Logos Library System, (Nashville: Thomas Nelson) 1997, c1996.

166James Strong, *New Strong's dictionary of Hebrew and Greek words [computer file]*, electronic ed., Logos Library System, (Nashville: Thomas Nelson) 1997, c1996.

167*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

*that come from God, (though they may be brought to fruition by the devil) are designed to get people to repent, restore order and turn back to God, but most do not recognize or acknowledge this principle of God. Thus, sickness and financial lack are outward signs that the person who suffers these things are out of order somewhere in their spiritual walk, whether or not Satan has a part in carrying out the punishment, (see Deuteronomy 28:15-68 above, Psalm 35:4, v. 26, 40:14, 60:1-4, Isaiah 34:8-11, 41:26-29, 45:14-17, Jeremiah 20:11-12, Daniel 9:1-15, Hosea chapter 4, Zechariah 12:4, II Corinthians 11:13-15 and I Timothy 4:1-11).*

**Psalm 35:4 and 26 -**

<sup>4</sup> Let those be put to shame and brought to dishonor  
Who seek after my life;

**Let those be turned back and brought to confusion**

**Who plot my hurt.168**

<sup>26</sup> **Let them be ashamed and brought to mutual confusion**

**Who rejoice at my hurt;**

Let them be clothed with shame and dishonor

Who exalt themselves against me.169

**Psalm 40:14 -**

<sup>14</sup> **Let them be ashamed and brought to mutual confusion**

**Who seek to destroy my life;**

Let them be driven backward and brought to dishonor

Who wish me evil.170

**Psalm 60:1-4 -**

<sup>1</sup> O God, You have cast us off;

You have broken us down;

You have been displeased;

Oh, restore us again!

<sup>2</sup> You have made the earth tremble;

You have broken it;

Heal its breaches, for it is shaking.

<sup>3</sup> You have shown Your people hard things;

---

168*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

169*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

170*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

**You have made us drink the wine of confusion.**

4 You have given a banner to those who fear You,  
That it may be displayed because of the truth. Selah<sup>171</sup>

**Isaiah 34:8-11 -**

8 For *it is* the day of the LORD's vengeance,  
The year of recompense for the cause of Zion.  
9 Its streams shall be turned into pitch,  
And its dust into brimstone;  
Its land shall become burning pitch.  
10 It shall not be quenched night or day;  
Its smoke shall ascend forever.  
From generation to generation it shall lie waste;  
No one shall pass through it forever and ever.  
11 But the pelican and the porcupine shall possess it,  
Also the owl and the raven shall dwell in it.  
**And He shall stretch out over it**

**The line of confusion and the stones of emptiness.<sup>172</sup>**

**Isaiah 41:26-29 -**

26 Who has declared from the beginning, that we may know?  
And former times, that we may say, '*He is righteous*'?  
Surely *there is* no one who shows,  
Surely *there is* no one who declares,  
Surely *there is* no one who hears your words.  
27 The first time *I said* to Zion,  
'Look, there they are!'  
And I will give to Jerusalem one who brings good tidings.  
28 For I looked, and *there was* no man;  
I looked among them, but *there was* no counselor,  
Who, when I asked of them, could answer a word.  
29 **Indeed they *are* all worthless;  
Their works *are* nothing;**

**Their molded images *are* wind and confusion.<sup>173</sup>**

**Isaiah 45:14-17 -**

---

<sup>171</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>172</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>173</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>14</sup>Thus says the LORD:

“The labor of Egypt and merchandise of Cush  
And of the Sabeans, men of stature,  
Shall come over to you, and they shall be yours;  
They shall walk behind you,  
They shall come over in chains;  
And they shall bow down to you.  
They will make supplication to you, *saying*, ‘Surely God *is* in you,  
And *there is* no other;  
*There is* no other God.’ ”

<sup>15</sup> Truly You *are* God, who hide Yourself,

O God of Israel, the Savior!

<sup>16</sup> **They shall be ashamed**

**And also disgraced, all of them;**

**They shall go in confusion together,**

***Who are makers of idols.***

<sup>17</sup> *But* Israel shall be saved by the LORD

With an everlasting salvation;

You shall not be ashamed or disgraced

Forever and ever.<sup>174</sup>

#### **Jeremiah 20:11-12 -**

<sup>11</sup> But the LORD *is* with me as a mighty, awesome One.

**Therefore my persecutors will stumble, and will not prevail.**

**They will be greatly ashamed, for they will not prosper.**

***Their everlasting confusion will never be forgotten.***

<sup>12</sup> But, O LORD of hosts,

You who test the righteous,

*And* see the mind and heart,

Let me see Your vengeance on them;

For I have pleaded my cause before You.<sup>175</sup>

#### **Daniel 9:1-15 -**

<sup>1</sup>In the first year of Darius the son of Ahasuerus, of the lineage of the Medes, who was made king over the realm of the Chaldeans—<sup>2</sup>in the first year of his reign I, Daniel, understood by the books the number of the years *specified* by the word of the LORD through Jeremiah the prophet, that He would accomplish seventy years in the desolations of Jerusalem.

---

<sup>174</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>175</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>3</sup>Then I set my face toward the Lord God to make request by prayer and supplications, with fasting, sackcloth, and ashes. <sup>4</sup>And I prayed to the LORD my God, and made confession, and said, “O Lord, great and awesome God, who keeps His covenant and mercy with those who love Him, and with those who keep His commandments, <sup>5</sup>“we have sinned and committed iniquity, we have done wickedly and rebelled, even by departing from Your precepts and Your judgments. <sup>6</sup>“Neither have we heeded Your servants the prophets, who spoke in Your name to our kings and our princes, to our fathers and all the people of the land. <sup>7</sup>“O Lord, righteousness *belongs* to You, but to us shame of face, as *it is* this day—to the men of Judah, to the inhabitants of Jerusalem and all Israel, those near and those far off in all the countries to which You have driven them, because of the unfaithfulness which they have committed against You. <sup>8</sup>“O Lord, to us *belongs* shame of face, to our kings, our princes, and our fathers, because we have sinned against You. <sup>9</sup>“To the Lord our God *belong* mercy and forgiveness, though we have rebelled against Him. <sup>10</sup>“We have not obeyed the voice of the LORD our God, to walk in His laws, which He set before us by His servants the prophets. <sup>11</sup>“**Yes, all Israel has transgressed Your law, and has departed so as not to obey Your voice; therefore the curse and the oath written in the Law of Moses the servant of God have been poured out on us, because we have sinned against Him.** <sup>12</sup>“**And He has confirmed His words, which He spoke against us and against our judges who judged us, by bringing upon us a great disaster; for under the whole heaven such has never been done as what has been done to Jerusalem.** <sup>13</sup>“**As *it is* written in the Law of Moses, all this disaster has come upon us; yet we have not made our prayer before the LORD our God, that we might turn from our iniquities and understand Your truth.** <sup>14</sup>“**Therefore the LORD has kept the disaster in mind, and brought it upon us; for the LORD our God *is* righteous in all the works which He does, though we have not obeyed His voice.** <sup>15</sup>“And now, O Lord our God, who brought Your people out of the land of Egypt with a mighty hand, and made Yourself a name, as *it is* this day—we have sinned, we have done wickedly!176

## Hosea Chapter 4 -

### Chapter 4

- <sup>1</sup> Hear the word of the LORD,  
You children of Israel,  
For the LORD *brings* a charge against the inhabitants of the land:  
“There is no truth or mercy  
Or knowledge of God in the land.
- <sup>2</sup> *By* swearing and lying,  
Killing and stealing and committing adultery,  
They break all restraint,  
With bloodshed upon bloodshed.
- <sup>3</sup> Therefore the land will mourn;  
And everyone who dwells there will waste away

With the beasts of the field  
And the birds of the air;  
Even the fish of the sea will be taken away.  
4       “Now let no man contend, or rebuke another;  
For your people *are* like those who contend with the priest.  
5       Therefore you shall stumble in the day;  
The prophet also shall stumble with you in the night;  
And I will destroy your mother.  
6       **My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge.  
Because you have rejected knowledge,  
I also will reject you from being priest for Me;  
Because you have forgotten the law of your God,  
I also will forget your children.**  
7       “The more they increased,  
The more they sinned against Me;  
I will change their glory into shame.  
8       They eat up the sin of My people;  
They set their heart on their iniquity.  
9       And it shall be: like people, like priest.  
So I will punish them for their ways,  
And reward them for their deeds.  
10       For they shall eat, but not have enough;  
They shall commit harlotry, but not increase;  
Because they have ceased obeying the LORD.  
11       “Harlotry, wine, and new wine enslave the heart.  
12       My people ask counsel from their wooden *idols*,  
And their staff informs them.  
For the spirit of harlotry has caused *them* to stray,  
And they have played the harlot against their God.  
13       They offer sacrifices on the mountaintops,  
And burn incense on the hills,  
Under oaks, poplars, and terebinths,  
Because their shade *is* good.  
Therefore your daughters commit harlotry,  
And your brides commit adultery.  
14       “I will not punish your daughters when they commit harlotry,  
Nor your brides when they commit adultery;  
For *the men* themselves go apart with harlots,  
And offer sacrifices with a ritual harlot.  
Therefore people *who* do not understand will be trampled.  
15       “Though you, Israel, play the harlot,  
Let not Judah offend.  
Do not come up to Gilgal,  
Nor go up to Beth Aven,  
Nor swear an oath, *saying*, ‘As the LORD lives’—  
16       “For Israel is stubborn



Like a stubborn calf;  
 Now the LORD will let them forage  
 Like a lamb in open country.  
<sup>17</sup> “Ephraim *is* joined to idols,  
 Let him alone.  
<sup>18</sup> Their drink is rebellion,  
 They commit harlotry continually.  
 Her rulers dearly love dishonor.  
<sup>19</sup> The wind has wrapped her up in its wings,  
 And they shall be ashamed because of their sacrifices.<sup>177</sup>

### **Zechariah 12:4 -**

<sup>4</sup>**“In that day,” says the LORD, “I will strike every horse with confusion, and its rider with madness; I will open My eyes on the house of Judah, and will strike every horse of the peoples with blindness.**<sup>178</sup>

### **II Corinthians 11:13-15 -**

<sup>13</sup>For such *are* false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into apostles of Christ. <sup>14</sup>And no wonder! For Satan himself transforms himself into an angel of light. <sup>15</sup>Therefore *it is* no great thing if his ministers also transform themselves into ministers of righteousness, whose end will be according to their works.<sup>179</sup>

### **I Timothy 4:1-11 -**

<sup>1</sup>Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons, <sup>2</sup>speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their own conscience seared with a hot iron, <sup>3</sup>forbidding to marry, *and commanding to abstain from foods which God created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe and know the truth.* <sup>4</sup>For every creature of God *is* good, and nothing is to be refused if it is received with thanksgiving; <sup>5</sup>for it is sanctified by the word of God and prayer.

<sup>6</sup>If you instruct the brethren in these things, you will be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished in the words of faith and of the good doctrine which you have carefully followed. <sup>7</sup>But reject profane and old wives' fables, and exercise yourself toward godliness. <sup>8</sup>For bodily exercise profits a little, but godliness is profitable for all things, having promise of the life that now is and of that which is to come. <sup>9</sup>This *is* a faithful saying and worthy of all acceptance. <sup>10</sup>For to this *end* we both labor and suffer reproach,

---

<sup>177</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>178</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>179</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

because we trust in the living God, who is *the* Savior of all men, especially of those who believe. <sup>11</sup>These things command and teach.<sup>180</sup>

*God sent His Son Jesus, as the Word, the Christ, Messiah or Deliverer to bring 'light' into the darkness of this confused world. Even physicists have demonstrated the order found in natural light. Spiritual 'light' brings revelation from God the Father into our mind. This creates ORDER in our thoughts and resultant actions. However, most people reject the 'light' of Christ that would enlighten them, as they love the darkness and associated sin. Therefore, these people do not 'comprehend' or understand the importance of the coming of the Son of God and will miss out on eternity because of their 'spiritual blindness'. Sin is DISORDER and obedience to God or righteousness through Jesus is ORDER. The 'light' of Christ comes from the blood of Jesus, which is the 'life' in Him. **The blood of Jesus is symbolic of the love of God. Therefore, the blood is holy and represents the ORDER of God.** This explains why the devil wants to pervert it with the idea of vampires, witchcraft, voodoo, 'traditional African medicine', etc., so as to bring about anarchy, chaos and darkness. The blood (or love of God) flows through every living higher creature on the planet. The love or life, represented by the blood of Jesus, was shed for and covers our sins if we accept it and repent. Repentance means to have heartfelt sorrow for the error of our ways and change to turn away from the sin. When we repent of our sinful ways and receive Jesus Christ as our Lord and Savior, then we become 'born again' from above of the Holy Spirit. It is imperative that from the point of salvation until our death or until Jesus comes back, (whichever comes first) we must remain faithful, obedient to God and 'abide' in Christ. We symbolically partake in the 'life' or blood of Christ when we drink the wine of the Lord's Supper, (a.k.a., Communion). As we mentioned above, Communion is one of the ways that we abide in Christ and we should strive to take it every day, as Jesus is our 'daily bread'. However, one should NOT take Communion if they do not have a repentant heart. Otherwise, God will judge them and they may become sick or even die. I believe that many people in the church take Communion on a regular basis without understanding the risks of doing so. In this, many Christians do become sick and die as a result, though no one notices, as the church leaders do not teach this important concept. Or, if they do teach it the people either do not understand or care. It is only by carefully following the teachings of Jesus and the apostles that we can abide in Jesus and through Him OVERCOME the world, (see the teaching, 'The Truth About Healing', Genesis 4:9-12, I Corinthians 11:23-32 above, Leviticus 17:10-14, Deuteronomy 12:20-28, Proverbs 4:14-19, John 1:1-5, 3:1-21 and I John chapter 5).*

#### **Leviticus 17:10-14 -**

**<sup>10</sup>And whatever man of the house of Israel, or of the strangers who dwell among you, who eats any blood, I will set My face against that person who eats blood, and will cut him off from among his people. <sup>11</sup>For the life of the flesh is in the blood, and I have given it to you upon the altar to make atonement for your souls; for it is the**

---

<sup>180</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

**blood that makes atonement for the soul.'** <sup>12</sup>“Therefore I said to the children of Israel, ‘No one among you shall eat blood, nor shall any stranger who dwells among you eat blood.’ <sup>13</sup>“Whatever man of the children of Israel, or of the strangers who dwell among you, who hunts and catches any animal or bird that may be eaten, **he shall pour out its blood and cover it with dust;** <sup>14</sup>“**for it is the life of all flesh. Its blood sustains its life. Therefore I said to the children of Israel, ‘You shall not eat the blood of any flesh, for the life of all flesh is its blood. Whoever eats it shall be cut off.’** <sup>181</sup>

#### Deuteronomy 12:20-28 -

<sup>20</sup>“When the LORD your God enlarges your border as He has promised you, and you say, ‘Let me eat meat,’ because you long to eat meat, you may eat as much meat as your heart desires. <sup>21</sup>“If the place where the LORD your God chooses to put His name is too far from you, then you may slaughter from your herd and from your flock which the LORD has given you, just as I have commanded you, and you may eat within your gates as much as your heart desires. <sup>22</sup>“**Just as the gazelle and the deer are eaten, so you may eat them; the unclean and the clean alike may eat them.** <sup>23</sup>“**Only be sure that you do not eat the blood, for the blood is the life; you may not eat the life with the meat.** <sup>24</sup>“**You shall not eat it; you shall pour it on the earth like water.** <sup>25</sup>“**You shall not eat it, that it may go well with you and your children after you, when you do *what is right* in the sight of the LORD.** <sup>26</sup>“**Only the holy things which you have, and your vowed offerings, you shall take and go to the place which the LORD chooses.** <sup>27</sup>“**And you shall offer your burnt offerings, the meat and the blood, on the altar of the LORD your God; and the blood of your sacrifices shall be poured out on the altar of the LORD your God, and you shall eat the meat.** <sup>28</sup>“**Observe and obey all these words which I command you, that it may go well with you and your children after you forever, when you do *what is good and right* in the sight of the LORD your God.** <sup>182</sup>

#### Proverbs 4:14-19 -

- <sup>14</sup> Do not enter the path of the wicked,  
And do not walk in the way of evil.  
<sup>15</sup> Avoid it, do not travel on it;  
Turn away from it and pass on.  
<sup>16</sup> For they do not sleep unless they have done evil;  
And their sleep is taken away unless they make *someone* fall.  
<sup>17</sup> For they eat the bread of wickedness,  
And drink the wine of violence.  
<sup>18</sup> **But the path of the just is like the shining sun,  
That shines ever brighter unto the perfect day.**  
<sup>19</sup> **The way of the wicked is like darkness;**

---

<sup>181</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>182</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

**They do not know what makes them stumble.<sup>183</sup>****John 1:1-5 -**

<sup>1</sup>In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. <sup>2</sup>He was in the beginning with God. <sup>3</sup>All things were made through Him, and without Him nothing was made that was made. <sup>4</sup>**In Him was life, and the life was the light of men.** <sup>5</sup>**And the light shines in the darkness, and the darkness did not comprehend it.**<sup>184</sup>

**John 3:1-21 -**

<sup>1</sup>There was a man of the Pharisees named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews. <sup>2</sup>This man came to Jesus by night and said to Him, "Rabbi, we know that You are a teacher come from God; for no one can do these signs that You do unless God is with him." <sup>3</sup>**Jesus answered and said to him, "Most assuredly, I say to you, unless one is born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God."** <sup>4</sup>**Nicodemus said to Him, "How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter a second time into his mother's womb and be born?"** <sup>5</sup>**Jesus answered, "Most assuredly, I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of God. <sup>6</sup>"That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. <sup>7</sup>"Do not marvel that I said to you, 'You must be born again.'** <sup>8</sup>**"The wind blows where it wishes, and you hear the sound of it, but cannot tell where it comes from and where it goes. So is everyone who is born of the Spirit."** <sup>9</sup>Nicodemus answered and said to Him, "How can these things be?" <sup>10</sup>Jesus answered and said to him, "Are you the teacher of Israel, and do not know these things? <sup>11</sup>"Most assuredly, I say to you, We speak what We know and testify what We have seen, and you do not receive Our witness. <sup>12</sup>"If I have told you earthly things and you do not believe, how will you believe if I tell you heavenly things? <sup>13</sup>"No one has ascended to heaven but He who came down from heaven, *that is*, the Son of Man who is in heaven. <sup>14</sup>"And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of Man be lifted up, <sup>15</sup>"that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have eternal life. <sup>16</sup>"**For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life. <sup>17</sup>"For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world through Him might be saved. <sup>18</sup>"He who believes in Him is not condemned; but he who does not believe is condemned already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. <sup>19</sup>"And this is the condemnation, that the light has come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. <sup>20</sup>"For everyone practicing evil hates the light and does not come to the light,**

---

<sup>183</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>184</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

**lest his deeds should be exposed. <sup>21</sup>“But he who does the truth comes to the light, that his deeds may be clearly seen, that they have been done in God.”<sup>185</sup>**

## I John Chapter 1 -

### Chapter 1

<sup>1</sup>That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled, concerning the Word of life— <sup>2</sup>the life was manifested, and we have seen, and bear witness, and declare to you that eternal life which was with the Father and was manifested to us— <sup>3</sup>that which we have seen and heard we declare to you, that you also may have fellowship with us; and truly our fellowship *is* with the Father and with His Son Jesus Christ. <sup>4</sup>And these things we write to you that your joy may be full.

<sup>5</sup>This is the message which we have heard from Him and declare to you, that God is light and in Him is no darkness at all. <sup>6</sup>If we say that we have fellowship with Him, and walk in darkness, we lie and do not practice the truth. <sup>7</sup>**But if we walk in the light as He is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin.** <sup>8</sup>If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. <sup>9</sup>If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us *our* sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. <sup>10</sup>If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His word is not in us.<sup>186</sup>

## I John Chapter 5 -

### Chapter 5

<sup>1</sup>Whoever believes that Jesus is the Christ is born of God, and everyone who loves Him who begot also loves him who is begotten of Him. <sup>2</sup>By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God and keep His commandments. <sup>3</sup>For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments. And His commandments are not burdensome. <sup>4</sup>For whatever is born of God overcomes the world. And this is the victory that has overcome the world—our faith. <sup>5</sup>Who is he who overcomes the world, but he who believes that Jesus is the Son of God?

<sup>6</sup>This is He who came by water and blood—Jesus Christ; not only by water, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit who bears witness, because the Spirit is truth. <sup>7</sup>For there are three that bear witness in heaven: the Father, the Word, and the Holy Spirit; and these three are one. <sup>8</sup>And there are three that bear witness on earth: the Spirit, the water, and the blood; and these three agree as one. <sup>9</sup>If we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater; for this is the witness of God which He has testified of His Son. <sup>10</sup>He who believes in the Son of God has the witness in himself; he who does not believe God has made Him a liar, because he has not believed the testimony that God has given of His Son. <sup>11</sup>And this is the testimony: that God has

---

<sup>185</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>186</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

given us eternal life, and this life is in His Son. <sup>12</sup>He who has the Son has life; he who does not have the Son of God does not have life. <sup>13</sup>These things I have written to you who believe in the name of the Son of God, that you may know that you have eternal life, and that you may *continue* to believe in the name of the Son of God.

<sup>14</sup>**Now this is the confidence that we have in Him, that if we ask anything according to His will, He hears us.** <sup>15</sup>**And if we know that He hears us, whatever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we have asked of Him.** <sup>16</sup>If anyone sees his brother sinning a sin *which does not lead* to death, he will ask, and He will give him life for those who commit sin not *leading* to death. There is sin *leading* to death. I do not say that he should pray about that. <sup>17</sup>All unrighteousness is sin, and there is sin not *leading* to death.

<sup>18</sup>**We know that whoever is born of God does not sin; but he who has been born of God keeps himself, and the wicked one does not touch him.** <sup>19</sup>**We know that we are of God, and the whole world lies *under the sway of the wicked one.*** <sup>20</sup>**And we know that the Son of God has come and has given us an understanding, that we may know Him who is true; and we are in Him who is true, in His Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God and eternal life.** <sup>21</sup>Little children, keep yourselves from idols. Amen. 187

*So we see that the restoration of ORDER in the earth by Jesus and the Holy Spirit working through God's chosen people is the way that God is bringing to fruition the plan for His kingdom and the replacement of His lost 'family members'. The devil is desperately trying to stop this move of God through Christ so as to try to prevent his demise in the lake of fire. **The works of Satan are to entice people to sin, create disorder, confusion and chaos. It was the purpose of God to send Jesus into the earth to bring light, order and holiness. It is our job to do everything that we can in the power of the Holy Spirit to fight against confusion, chaos and disorder. We can do this to show our love for God by obeying Him and treating our fellow man, (even our enemies who are also made in the image of God) with love and respect. Creating order in the face of chaos may be as simple as picking up trash in public places, putting away a shopping cart in its proper place, making our own bed in the morning or just being on time and doing what we say that we will do, no matter the cost! All liars and those who destroy the earth will end up in the lake of fire.** People do not think anything of breaking traffic laws, consistently being late for appointments, breaking commitments, littering, not cleaning up after themselves, etc. Most people consider these actions as trivial, but these are the very things that true Christians OVERCOME and that set them apart from false 'Christians' and the rest of the people of the world, who are the children of the devil, (see Romans chapter 8 and I John chapter 3 above, Galatians 3:26-29, I John chapter 4 and Revelation 11:17-18).*

### **Galatians 3:26-29 -**

<sup>26</sup>**For you are all sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus.** <sup>27</sup>For as many of you as were baptized into Christ have put on Christ. <sup>28</sup>There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is

---

187The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

neither slave nor free, there is neither male nor female; for you are all one in Christ Jesus.  
<sup>29</sup>And if you *are* Christ's, then you are Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.<sup>188</sup>

## I John Chapter 4 -

### Chapter 4

<sup>1</sup>Beloved, do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits, whether they are of God; because many false prophets have gone out into the world. <sup>2</sup>By this you know the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is of God, <sup>3</sup>and every spirit that does not confess that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is not of God. And this is the *spirit* of the Antichrist, which you have heard was coming, and is now already in the world. <sup>4</sup>You are of God, little children, and have overcome them, because He who is in you is greater than he who is in the world. <sup>5</sup>They are of the world. Therefore they speak *as* of the world, and the world hears them. <sup>6</sup>**We are of God. He who knows God hears us; he who is not of God does not hear us. By this we know the spirit of truth and the spirit of error.**

<sup>7</sup>Beloved, let us love one another, for love is of God; and everyone who loves is born of God and knows God. <sup>8</sup>He who does not love does not know God, for God is love. <sup>9</sup>In this the love of God was manifested toward us, that God has sent His only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through Him. <sup>10</sup>In this is love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us and sent His Son *to be* the propitiation for our sins. <sup>11</sup>Beloved, if God so loved us, we also ought to love one another.

<sup>12</sup>No one has seen God at any time. If we love one another, God abides in us, and His love has been perfected in us. <sup>13</sup>By this we know that we abide in Him, and He in us, because He has given us of His Spirit. <sup>14</sup>And we have seen and testify that the Father has sent the Son *as* Savior of the world. <sup>15</sup>Whoever confesses that Jesus is the Son of God, God abides in him, and he in God. <sup>16</sup>And we have known and believed the love that God has for us. God is love, and he who abides in love abides in God, and God in him.

<sup>17</sup>**Love has been perfected among us in this: that we may have boldness in the day of judgment; because as He is, so are we in this world.** <sup>18</sup>**There is no fear in love; but perfect love casts out fear, because fear involves torment. But he who fears has not been made perfect in love.** <sup>19</sup>**We love Him because He first loved us.**

<sup>20</sup>**If someone says, "I love God," and hates his brother, he is a liar; for he who does not love his brother whom he has seen, how can he love God whom he has not seen?** <sup>21</sup>**And this commandment we have from Him: that he who loves God *must* love his brother also.**<sup>189</sup>

## Revelation 11:17-18 -

<sup>17</sup>saying:

---

<sup>188</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>189</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

“We give You thanks, O Lord God Almighty,  
 The One who is and who was and who is to come,  
 Because You have taken Your great power and reigned.  
 18       The nations were angry, and Your wrath has come,  
 And the time of the dead, that they should be judged,  
 And that You should reward Your servants the prophets and the saints,  
 And those who fear Your name, small and great,  
 And should **destroy those who destroy the earth.**”<sup>190</sup>

*One of the most important issues of order in God’s eyes is the order within the families of His people. These families are also made in the image of God. Unity, (oneness) and order in the Christian family symbolize unity and order in the body of Christ and the family of God in His kingdom. Though there are many scriptures relating to this order, one of the main problems in the modern Christian church and has been present since the beginning of mankind is when people submit to the ‘Jezebel spirit’. Jezebel was an evil queen of Israel and married to the spiritually weak and evil King Ahab during the time of Elijah the prophet and whose story is found in the Old Testament, (see I Kings chapters 16-21 and II Kings chapter 9). Ahab was to that date the most evil king of Israel and he submitted to the domineering Queen Jezebel. The Jezebel spirit is a demonic, controlling, antichrist spirit that was also in the Garden of Eden. This spirit works to upset the order of God. It works mainly through women so that they leave their natural place of order in submission to their husbands and rebel so as to gain control. This is how the devil brought sin into the world through Eve. Adam had a choice and decided to submit to his wife Eve rather than the commands of God. This was in effect the operation of the ‘Ahab spirit’. Thus the Jezebel spirit is a dominating spirit of control and it works along with the Ahab spirit of disorderly submission so that women dominate men. The Jezebel and Ahab spirits work hand in glove with the spirit of fear. The Jezebel spirit is a domineering, ‘masculine’ spirit, (though demons do not have gender as humans do). The Ahab spirit is a submissive, ‘feminine’ spirit. Women usually submit to the Jezebel spirit so that they can try to ‘control’ their lives and the lives of others around them. Men usually submit to the Ahab spirit because they fear losing their families or possessions and so that they can keep their wives ‘off their backs’. Comedians and others often make fun of this situation as to who wears the pants in the family, but I can tell you without a doubt that God is not laughing about this grave, universal problem.*

*Unfortunately since the time of Eve, women have not recognized the work of the Jezebel spirit in their lives and have continuously walked in disobedience to God’s Word, so that they can have dominion over their husbands. The men have also failed to recognize the operation of the Ahab spirit in their lives and continue to submit to it in the fear of loss. This is also in direct disobedience of God’s Word. These demonic spirits have worked as ‘familiar spirits’ down through the ages in an attempt to overthrow the kingdom of God. It is the Jezebel spirit that is primarily responsible for the disorder in the Christian church today. This spirit rules and reigns in God’s church primarily through women*

---

190The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.



*because they fear hurt and loss and they choose to walk in the fleshly character of jealousy. If women would decide not to be jealous and afraid and they would cease to submit to the Jezebel spirit and if men would stop letting this spirit rule in the home, it would put an end to much of the misery that God's people needlessly suffer and would allow the order of God to reign supreme. When wives and daughters submit to the Jezebel spirit, they often end up suffering more with 'female problems' along with heavy menstrual periods/PMS and even sicknesses such as breast cancer. This is God's way of trying to tell them they are out of order, but most do not recognize this principle. Likewise, if men would decide NOT to submit to the power of the Jezebel spirit operating through their wives and daughters, if they would 'grow a backbone', lovingly stand up for the truth and order of God's government and if they would show true love for their wives and daughters, this disorder that prevails in the Christian church and the associated sufferings would cease, (see Ephesians chapter 5 above, Colossians 3:18-25 and Revelation 2:18-29).*

### **Colossians 3:18-25 -**

**<sup>18</sup>Wives, submit to your own husbands, as is fitting in the Lord. <sup>19</sup>Husbands, love your wives and do not be bitter toward them. <sup>20</sup>Children, obey your parents in all things, for this is well pleasing to the Lord. <sup>21</sup>Fathers, do not provoke your children, lest they become discouraged. <sup>22</sup>Bondservants, obey in all things your masters according to the flesh, not with eyeservice, as men-pleasers, but in sincerity of heart, fearing God. <sup>23</sup>And whatever you do, do it heartily, as to the Lord and not to men, <sup>24</sup>knowing that from the Lord you will receive the reward of the inheritance; for you serve the Lord Christ. <sup>25</sup>But he who does wrong will be repaid for what he has done, and there is no partiality.**<sup>191</sup>

### **Revelation 2:18-29 -**

**<sup>18</sup>“And to the angel of the church in Thyatira write,  
 ‘These things says the Son of God, who has eyes like a flame of fire, and His feet like fine brass: <sup>19</sup>“I know your works, love, service, faith, and your patience; and *as* for your works, the last *are* more than the first. <sup>20</sup>“Nevertheless I have a few things against you, because you allow that woman Jezebel, who calls herself a prophetess, to teach and seduce My servants to commit sexual immorality and eat things sacrificed to idols. <sup>21</sup>“And I gave her time to repent of her sexual immorality, and she did not repent. <sup>22</sup>“Indeed I will cast her into a sickbed, and those who commit adultery with her into great tribulation, unless they repent of their deeds. <sup>23</sup>“I will kill her children with death, and all the churches shall know that I am He who searches the minds and hearts. And I will give to each one of you according to your works. <sup>24</sup>“Now to you I say, and to the rest in Thyatira, as many as do not have this doctrine, who have not known the depths of Satan, as they say, I will put on you no other burden.**

---

<sup>191</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.*

<sup>25</sup>“But hold fast what you have till I come. <sup>26</sup>“And he who overcomes, and keeps My works until the end, to him I will give power over the nations—

<sup>27</sup> ‘He shall rule them with a rod of iron;  
They shall be dashed to pieces like the potter’s vessels’—

as I also have received from My Father; <sup>28</sup>“and I will give him the morning star.  
<sup>29</sup>“He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.” ’192

*As we said earlier, we suffer for two main reasons; one for our own stupidity in disobedience to God and the other suffering is put on us by the devil when we do the right thing. We get no credit for suffering God’s punishment for our error, though it is designed to cause us to repent and move back to God. We DO get extra credit from God for suffering for righteousness sake. If we learn to operate within the governmental order of God, shun the spirits of Jezebel, Ahab and fear and obey God alone, then we will eliminate the first category of suffering and will have come into perfection in Christ.*

## **2. Foolishness/Misunderstanding/Ignorance vs. Wisdom/Understanding/Knowledge -**

*As we saw earlier, worldly, human wisdom comes from Satan and is a result of bitterness, envy and self-seeking in the heart of the person who operates in it. Worldly, demonic wisdom permeates the earth and most people operate in this type of wisdom because it comforts the flesh and will make them ‘feel good’. However, it leads to confusion and every evil thing. This is the type of wisdom for example that says one may do whatever they like ‘as long as it does not hurt anyone else’, (though it invariable does even if they deny it). It is also the wisdom that says ‘be wise - condomize’ in order to try to fight sexually transmitted diseases, (STD’s - especially HIV/AIDS) which is punishment from God for non-Biblically based sex. Godly wisdom would tell us that there would be no STD’s if people would only have sex within marriage. Worldly wisdom, which is really FOOLISHNESS, leads to sickness, destruction and death, even eternal death. When people operate in this selfish wisdom, they will have MISUNDERSTANDING of many, if not all of the things of God, as He will hide His true ways from them. Worldly wisdom also leads to all human misunderstanding on the planet. This will cause people to live in IGNORANCE of God’s will, His ways and plan for mankind. Unfortunately, this also describes the state of many in the Christian church around the world. These ‘Christians’ are like ostriches as they ‘bury their heads in the sand’ and live defeated lives in denial of the true things of God, because the truth does not line up with they want to believe. Since they lack true Godly WISDOM, UNDERSTANDING AND KNOWLEDGE, they choose to ignore the truths of the Word of God that could lead them into victory in this life and benefit them for eternity. If they were to accept these truths, they would have to accept accountability for their actions, repent and change. However, due to their comfort in walking in fleshly sin based on worldly, demonic wisdom, they reject the true righteousness of God through the real Jesus Christ. Instead, these hypocrites who call themselves ‘Christian’ substitute a false Christ and a false set of beliefs that blend the Word of God with what they want to believe about God and human traditions, (such as*

---

192The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

*pagan holidays like Easter, Christmas and Halloween). This false belief system allows them to sin freely and wrongly believe that they will still be saved when Jesus comes back. These fake, hypocritical 'Christians' will have another thing coming when they stand before God one day and try to explain why they lived sinful lives though still calling themselves Christian, just before they are thrown into the lake of fire. Those who die before Jesus comes back will find themselves in hell, wishing to no avail to have another chance to do things right.*

*We also saw above that for us to obtain God's wisdom through Jesus, we have to fear Him above all other things. Otherwise, He will not give us His wisdom. **The wisdom of God is the first and most important thing that we need to obtain from Him. When we get God's WISDOM through Jesus then we also need to get UNDERSTANDING from the Holy Spirit. The true understanding of God comes from the revelatory KNOWLEDGE of God the Father. Having this type of knowledge does not only mean to know about God and His ways, but it is actually having the same thoughts as God through having the mind of Christ.** The original sin of Eve and Adam was one that was out of God's order. God told Adam that on the day that he ate of the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil, he would surely die. Satan told Eve that she would not surely die when she ate the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. Eve believed the lie of Satan over the truth of God. After she ate, she convinced Adam to eat of it as well. He submitted to the 'Jezebel spirit' and ate the forbidden fruit. They then gained the knowledge of God without first having the wisdom and understanding from God that would have allowed them to properly use that knowledge. They were out of order. Thus, God cast them out of the Garden of Eden before they could eat of the tree of eternal life and gain immortality. God placed the 'sin nature' into the human genetic code. Adam did indeed die on the 'day' that he ate of the forbidden fruit, because he died at the age of 930 years. To God a day is as a thousand years, so Adam died within the first thousand years or 'day' of mankind. From that point forward, it has been the job of humans to try to get things right with God and overcome the sin nature of the flesh. It is only through the orderly acquisition of wisdom from Jesus, understanding from the Holy Spirit and finally the knowledge of the Father that will bring us back to God through perfection in Christ.*

*The wisdom of God is foolishness to people and the wisdom of people is foolishness to God. It was through wisdom, understanding and knowledge that God created the heavens and the earth and made everything work. It is also through God's wisdom, understanding and knowledge that we should build our own homes and families as well as God's house, (the church) and to fill it with obedient people. Truly wise Christians will have all kinds of benefits from health to wealth and peace and eventually a wonderful eternal life in the presence of God. These people will respond correctly both to chastisements from God and correction from other Godly Christians. The fools of the world on the other hand, (and there are many of these in the Christian church) will only continue in their foolishness and ultimately end up in the lake of fire. We can see that the modern Christian church has replaced the commandments of God with worldly, demonic wisdom and human traditions, (see the teachings 'Christianity 101', UNDERSTANDING - The Key to ETERNITY', 'KNOWLEDGE - The Key to Perfection', 'The Truth About*

*Healing', Psalm 38:1-11, James 3:13-18 above, Genesis chapter 3, 5:5, Job 39:13-18, II Peter 3:8, Psalm 38:1-11, Proverbs 3:1-4:13, 9:1-12, 12:21-23, 14:24, 15:2, v. 14, 19:1-3, 24:1-12, 27:22, Mark 7:1-23 and I Corinthians 1:10-2:16).*

## Genesis Chapter 3 -

### Chapter 3

<sup>1</sup>Now the serpent was more cunning than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said to the woman, "Has God indeed said, 'You shall not eat of every tree of the garden?'" <sup>2</sup>And the woman said to the serpent, "We may eat the fruit of the trees of the garden; <sup>3</sup>"but of the fruit of the tree which *is* in the midst of the garden, God has said, 'You shall not eat it, nor shall you touch it, lest you die.' " <sup>4</sup>Then the serpent said to the woman, "You will not surely die. <sup>5</sup>"For God knows that in the day you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil." <sup>6</sup>So when the woman saw that the tree *was* good for food, that it *was* pleasant to the eyes, and a tree desirable to make *one* wise, she took of its fruit and ate. She also gave to her husband with her, and he ate. <sup>7</sup>Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they knew that they *were* naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves coverings. <sup>8</sup>And they heard the sound of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day, and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God among the trees of the garden.

<sup>9</sup>Then the LORD God called to Adam and said to him, "Where *are* you?" <sup>10</sup>So he said, "I heard Your voice in the garden, and I was afraid because I was naked; and I hid myself." <sup>11</sup>And He said, "Who told you that you *were* naked? Have you eaten from the tree of which I commanded you that you should not eat?" <sup>12</sup>Then the man said, "The woman whom You gave *to be* with me, she gave me of the tree, and I ate." <sup>13</sup>And the LORD God said to the woman, "What *is* this you have done?" The woman said, "The serpent deceived me, and I ate." <sup>14</sup>So the LORD God said to the serpent:

"Because you have done this,  
You *are* cursed more than all cattle,  
And more than every beast of the field;  
On your belly you shall go,  
And you shall eat dust  
All the days of your life.

<sup>15</sup> And I will put enmity  
Between you and the woman,  
And between your seed and her Seed;  
He shall bruise your head,  
And you shall bruise His heel."

<sup>16</sup>To the woman He said:

"I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception;  
In pain you shall bring forth children;  
Your desire *shall be* for your husband,  
And he shall rule over you."

<sup>17</sup>Then to Adam He said, “Because you have heeded the voice of your wife, and have eaten from the tree of which I commanded you, saying, ‘You shall not eat of it’:

“Cursed *is* the ground for your sake;  
In toil you shall eat *of* it  
All the days of your life.

<sup>18</sup> Both thorns and thistles it shall bring forth for you,  
And you shall eat the herb of the field.

<sup>19</sup> In the sweat of your face you shall eat bread  
Till you return to the ground,  
For out of it you were taken;  
For dust you *are*,  
And to dust you shall return.”

<sup>20</sup>And Adam called his wife’s name Eve, because she was the mother of all living.  
<sup>21</sup>Also for Adam and his wife the LORD God made tunics of skin, and clothed them.

<sup>22</sup>Then the LORD God said, “Behold, the man has become like one of Us, to know good and evil. And now, lest he put out his hand and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever”— <sup>23</sup>therefore the LORD God sent him out of the garden of Eden to till the ground from which he was taken. <sup>24</sup>So He drove out the man; and He placed cherubim at the east of the garden of Eden, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to guard the way to the tree of life.<sup>193</sup>

### Genesis 5:5 -

<sup>5</sup>So all the days that Adam lived were nine hundred and thirty years; and he died.<sup>194</sup>

### Job 39:13-18 -

<sup>13</sup> “The wings of the ostrich wave proudly,  
But are her wings and pinions *like the* kindly stork’s?  
<sup>14</sup> For she leaves her eggs on the ground,  
And warms them in the dust;  
<sup>15</sup> She forgets that a foot may crush them,  
Or that a wild beast may break them.  
<sup>16</sup> She treats her young harshly, as though *they were* not hers;  
Her labor is in vain, without concern,  
<sup>17</sup> **Because God deprived her of wisdom,  
And did not endow her with understanding.**  
<sup>18</sup> When she lifts herself on high,

She scorns the horse and its rider.<sup>195</sup>

---

<sup>193</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>194</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>195</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

**II Peter 3:8 -**

<sup>8</sup>But, beloved, do not forget this one thing, that **with the Lord one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.**<sup>196</sup>

**Proverbs 3:1-4:13 -****Chapter 3**

<sup>1</sup> My son, do not forget my law,  
But let your heart keep my commands;  
<sup>2</sup> For length of days and long life  
And peace they will add to you.  
<sup>3</sup> Let not mercy and truth forsake you;  
Bind them around your neck,  
Write them on the tablet of your heart,  
<sup>4</sup> *And* so find favor and high esteem  
In the sight of God and man.  
<sup>5</sup> **Trust in the LORD with all your heart,  
And lean not on your own understanding;**  
<sup>6</sup> **In all your ways acknowledge Him,  
And He shall direct your paths.**

<sup>7</sup> **Do not be wise in your own eyes;  
Fear the LORD and depart from evil.**  
<sup>8</sup> **It will be health to your flesh,  
And strength to your bones.**  
<sup>9</sup> **Honor the LORD with your possessions,  
And with the firstfruits of all your increase;**  
<sup>10</sup> **So your barns will be filled with plenty,  
And your vats will overflow with new wine.**  
<sup>11</sup> **My son, do not despise the chastening of the LORD,  
Nor detest His correction;**  
<sup>12</sup> **For whom the LORD loves He corrects,  
Just as a father the son *in whom* he delights.**

<sup>13</sup> **Happy is the man *who* finds wisdom,  
And the man *who* gains understanding;**  
<sup>14</sup> **For her proceeds *are* better than the profits of silver,  
And her gain than fine gold.**  
<sup>15</sup> **She is more precious than rubies,  
And all the things you may desire cannot compare with her.**  
<sup>16</sup> **Length of days is in her right hand,  
In her left hand riches and honor.**

---

<sup>196</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

17       **Her ways *are* ways of pleasantness,**  
And all her paths *are* peace.

18       **She *is* a tree of life to those who take hold of her,**  
And happy *are all* who retain her.

19       **The LORD by wisdom founded the earth;**  
By understanding He established the heavens;

20       **By His knowledge the depths were broken up,**  
And clouds drop down the dew.

21       **My son, let them not depart from your eyes—**  
Keep sound wisdom and discretion;

22       **So they will be life to your soul**  
And grace to your neck.

23       **Then you will walk safely in your way,**  
And your foot will not stumble.

24       **When you lie down, you will not be afraid;**  
Yes, you will lie down and your sleep will be sweet.

25       **Do not be afraid of sudden terror,**  
Nor of trouble from the wicked when it comes;

26       **For the LORD will be your confidence,**  
And will keep your foot from being caught.

27       Do not withhold good from those to whom it is due,  
When it is in the power of your hand to do *so*.

28       Do not say to your neighbor,  
“Go, and come back,  
And tomorrow I will give *it*,”  
When *you have* it with you.

29       Do not devise evil against your neighbor,  
For he dwells by you for safety’s sake.

30       Do not strive with a man without cause,  
If he has done you no harm.

31       **Do not envy the oppressor,**  
And choose none of his ways;

32       **For the perverse *person is* an abomination to the LORD,**  
But His secret counsel *is* with the upright.

33       **The curse of the LORD *is* on the house of the wicked,**  
But He blesses the home of the just.

34       **Surely He scorns the scornful,**  
But gives grace to the humble.

35       **The wise shall inherit glory,**  
But shame shall be the legacy of fools.

#### Chapter 4

<sup>1</sup>       Hear, *my* children, the instruction of a father,  
And give attention to know understanding;

2 For I give you good doctrine:  
 Do not forsake my law.  
 3 When I was my father's son,  
 Tender and the only one in the sight of my mother,  
 4 He also taught me, and said to me:  
 "Let your heart retain my words;  
 Keep my commands, and live.  
 5 Get wisdom! Get understanding!  
 Do not forget, nor turn away from the words of my mouth.  
 6 Do not forsake her, and she will preserve you;  
**Love her, and she will keep you.**  
 7 **Wisdom is the principal thing;**  
**Therefore get wisdom.**  
**And in all your getting, get understanding.**  
 8 **Exalt her, and she will promote you;**  
**She will bring you honor, when you embrace her.**  
 9 **She will place on your head an ornament of grace;**  
**A crown of glory she will deliver to you."**  
 10 **Hear, my son, and receive my sayings,**  
**And the years of your life will be many.**  
 11 **I have taught you in the way of wisdom;**  
**I have led you in right paths.**  
 12 **When you walk, your steps will not be hindered,**  
**And when you run, you will not stumble.**  
 13 **Take firm hold of instruction, do not let go;**  
**Keep her, for she is your life.**<sup>197</sup>

### Proverbs 9:1-12 -

1 Wisdom has built her house,  
 She has hewn out her seven pillars;  
 2 She has slaughtered her meat,  
 She has mixed her wine,  
 She has also furnished her table.  
 3 She has sent out her maidens,  
 She cries out from the highest places of the city,  
 4 "Whoever *is* simple, let him turn in here!"  
*As for* him who lacks understanding, she says to him,  
 5 "Come, eat of my bread  
 And drink of the wine I have mixed.  
 6 **Forsake foolishness and live,**  
**And go in the way of understanding.**  
 7 **"He who corrects a scoffer gets shame for himself,**

---

<sup>197</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.



8 **And he who rebukes a wicked *man only* harms himself.**  
**Do not correct a scoffer, lest he hate you;**  
**Rebuke a wise *man*, and he will love you.**  
 9 **Give *instruction* to a wise *man*, and he will be still wiser;**  
**Teach a just *man*, and he will increase in learning.**  
 10 **“The fear of the LORD *is* the beginning of wisdom,**  
**And the knowledge of the Holy One *is* understanding.**  
 11 **For by me your days will be multiplied,**  
**And years of life will be added to you.**  
 12 **If you are wise, you are wise for yourself,**  
**And *if* you scoff, you will bear *it* alone.”<sup>198</sup>**

**Proverbs 12:21-23 -**

21 No grave trouble will overtake the righteous,  
 But the wicked shall be filled with evil.  
 22 **Lying lips *are* an abomination to the LORD,**  
**But those who deal truthfully *are* His delight.**  
 23 **A prudent man conceals knowledge,**  
**But the heart of fools proclaims foolishness.<sup>199</sup>**

**Proverbs 14:24 -**

24 The crown of the wise is their riches,  
 But the foolishness of fools *is* folly.<sup>200</sup>

**Proverbs 15:2 and 14 -**

2 The tongue of the wise uses knowledge rightly,  
 But the mouth of fools pours forth foolishness.<sup>201</sup>

14 The heart of him who has understanding seeks knowledge,  
 But the mouth of fools feeds on foolishness.<sup>202</sup>

---

198 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

199 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

200 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

201 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

202 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

**Proverbs 19:1-3 -**

<sup>1</sup> Better *is* the poor who walks in his integrity  
Than *one who is* perverse in his lips, and is a fool.  
<sup>2</sup> Also it is not good *for* a soul *to be* without knowledge,  
And he sins who hastens with *his* feet.  
<sup>3</sup> The foolishness of a man twists his way,  
And his heart frets against the LORD.<sup>203</sup>

**Proverbs 22:15 -**

<sup>15</sup> Foolishness *is* bound up in the heart of a child;  
The rod of correction will drive it far from him.<sup>204</sup>

**Proverbs 24:1-12 -**

<sup>1</sup> Do not be envious of evil men,  
Nor desire to be with them;  
<sup>2</sup> For their heart devises violence,  
And their lips talk of troublemaking.  
<sup>3</sup> **Through wisdom a house is built,**  
**And by understanding it is established;**  
<sup>4</sup> **By knowledge the rooms are filled**  
**With all precious and pleasant riches.**  
<sup>5</sup> A wise man *is* strong,  
Yes, a man of knowledge increases strength;  
<sup>6</sup> For by wise counsel you will wage your own war,  
And in a multitude of counselors *there is* safety.  
<sup>7</sup> Wisdom *is* too lofty for a fool;  
He does not open his mouth in the gate.  
<sup>8</sup> He who plots to do evil  
Will be called a schemer.  
<sup>9</sup> **The devising of foolishness *is* sin,**  
**And the scoffer *is* an abomination to men.**  
<sup>10</sup> *If* you faint in the day of adversity,  
Your strength *is* small.  
<sup>11</sup> Deliver *those who* are drawn toward death,  
And hold back *those* stumbling to the slaughter.  
<sup>12</sup> *If* you say, "Surely we did not know this,"  
Does not He who weighs the hearts consider *it*?  
He who keeps your soul, does He *not* know *it*?

---

<sup>203</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>204</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

And will He *not* render to *each* man according to his deeds?<sup>205</sup>

**Proverbs 27:22 -**

<sup>22</sup> Though you grind a fool in a mortar with a pestle along with crushed grain,  
Yet his foolishness will not depart from him.<sup>206</sup>

**Mark 7:1-23 -**

<sup>1</sup>Then the Pharisees and some of the scribes came together to Him, having come from Jerusalem. <sup>2</sup>Now when they saw some of His disciples eat bread with defiled, that is, with unwashed hands, they found fault. <sup>3</sup>For the Pharisees and all the Jews do not eat unless they wash *their* hands in a special way, holding the tradition of the elders. <sup>4</sup>*When they come* from the marketplace, they do not eat unless they wash. And there are many other things which they have received and hold, *like* the washing of cups, pitchers, copper vessels, and couches. <sup>5</sup>Then the Pharisees and scribes asked Him, “Why do Your disciples not walk according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashed hands?” <sup>6</sup>He answered and said to them, “**Well did Isaiah prophesy of you hypocrites, as it is written:**

‘This people honors Me with *their* lips,  
But their heart is far from Me.

<sup>7</sup> And in vain they worship Me,  
Teaching *as* doctrines the commandments of men.’

<sup>8</sup>“For laying aside the commandment of God, you hold the tradition of men—the washing of pitchers and cups, and many other such things you do.” <sup>9</sup>**He said to them, “All to well you reject the commandment of God, that you may keep your tradition.** <sup>10</sup>“For Moses said, ‘Honor your father and your mother’; and, ‘He who curses father or mother, let him be put to death.’ <sup>11</sup>“But you say, ‘If a man says to his father or mother, “Whatever profit you might have received from me *is* Corban”—’ (that is, a gift *to God*), <sup>12</sup>“then you no longer let him do anything for his father or his mother, <sup>13</sup>“making the word of God of no effect through your tradition which you have handed down. And many such things you do.” <sup>14</sup>When He had called all the multitude to *Himself*, He said to them, “Hear Me, everyone, and understand: <sup>15</sup>“There is nothing that enters a man from outside which can defile him; but the things which come out of him, those are the things that defile a man. <sup>16</sup>“If anyone has ears to hear, let him hear!” <sup>17</sup>When He had entered a house away from the crowd, His disciples asked Him concerning the parable. <sup>18</sup>So He said to them, “Are you thus without understanding also? Do you not perceive that whatever enters a man from outside cannot defile him, <sup>19</sup>“because it does not enter his heart but his stomach, and is eliminated, *thus* purifying all foods?” <sup>20</sup>**And He said, “What comes out of a man, that defiles a man. <sup>21</sup>“For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, <sup>22</sup>“thefts, covetousness, wickedness,**

---

<sup>205</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>206</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

**deceit, lewdness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness. <sup>23</sup>“All these evil things come from within and defile a man.”<sup>207</sup>**

### **I Corinthians 1:10-2:16 -**

<sup>10</sup>Now I plead with you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that you all speak the same thing, and *that* there be no divisions among you, but *that* you be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment. <sup>11</sup>For it has been declared to me concerning you, my brethren, by those of Chloe’s *household*, that there are contentions among you. <sup>12</sup>Now I say this, that each of you says, “I am of Paul,” or “I am of Apollos,” or “I am of Cephas,” or “I am of Christ.” <sup>13</sup>Is Christ divided? Was Paul crucified for you? Or were you baptized in the name of Paul? <sup>14</sup>I thank God that I baptized none of you except Crispus and Gaius, <sup>15</sup>lest anyone should say that I had baptized in my own name. <sup>16</sup>Yes, I also baptized the household of Stephanas. Besides, I do not know whether I baptized any other. <sup>17</sup>For Christ did not send me to baptize, but to preach the gospel, not with wisdom of words, lest the cross of Christ should be made of no effect.

<sup>18</sup>**For the message of the cross is foolishness to those who are perishing, but to us who are being saved it is the power of God.** <sup>19</sup>**For it is written:**

**“I will destroy the wisdom of the wise,  
And bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent.”**

<sup>20</sup>**Where *is* the wise? Where *is* the scribe? Where *is* the disputer of this age? Has not God made foolish the wisdom of this world?** <sup>21</sup>**For since, in the wisdom of God, the world through wisdom did not know God, it pleased God through the foolishness of the message preached to save those who believe.** <sup>22</sup>For Jews request a sign, and Greeks seek after wisdom; <sup>23</sup>but we preach Christ crucified, to the Jews a stumbling block and to the Greeks foolishness, <sup>24</sup>but to those who are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God and the wisdom of God. <sup>25</sup>**Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men, and the weakness of God is stronger than men.**

<sup>26</sup>For you see your calling, brethren, that not many wise according to the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, *are called.* <sup>27</sup>But God has chosen the foolish things of the world to put to shame the wise, and God has chosen the weak things of the world to put to shame the things which are mighty; <sup>28</sup>and the base things of the world and the things which are despised God has chosen, and the things which are not, to bring to nothing the things that are, <sup>29</sup>that no flesh should glory in His presence. <sup>30</sup>But of Him you are in Christ Jesus, who became for us wisdom from God—and righteousness and sanctification and redemption—<sup>31</sup>that, as it is written, “He who glories, let him glory in the LORD.”

## **Chapter 2**

<sup>1</sup>And I, brethren, when I came to you, did not come with excellence of speech or of wisdom declaring to you the testimony of God. <sup>2</sup>For I determined not to know anything among you except Jesus Christ and Him crucified. <sup>3</sup>I was with you in weakness, in fear,

---

<sup>207</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

and in much trembling. <sup>4</sup>And my speech and my preaching *were* not with persuasive words of human wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit and of power, <sup>5</sup>that your faith should not be in the wisdom of men but in the power of God.

**<sup>6</sup>However, we speak wisdom among those who are mature, yet not the wisdom of this age, nor of the rulers of this age, who are coming to nothing. <sup>7</sup>But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, the hidden *wisdom* which God ordained before the ages for our glory, <sup>8</sup>which none of the rulers of this age knew; for had they known, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. <sup>9</sup>But as it is written:**

**“Eye has not seen, nor ear heard,  
Nor have entered into the heart of man  
The things which God has prepared for those who love Him.”**

**<sup>10</sup>But God has revealed *them* to us through His Spirit. For the Spirit searches all things, yes, the deep things of God. <sup>11</sup>For what man knows the things of a man except the spirit of the man which is in him? Even so no one knows the things of God except the Spirit of God. <sup>12</sup>Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit who is from God, that we might know the things that have been freely given to us by God. <sup>13</sup>These things we also speak, not in words which man’s wisdom teaches but which the Holy Spirit teaches, comparing spiritual things with spiritual. <sup>14</sup>But the natural man does not receive the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness to him; nor can he know *them*, because they are spiritually discerned. <sup>15</sup>But he who is spiritual judges all things, yet he himself is *rightly* judged by no one. <sup>16</sup>For “**who has known the mind of the LORD that he may instruct Him?**” **But we have the mind of Christ.**<sup>208</sup>**

*Thus, pride, foolishness and all evil things are heart issues. We also see then that we must have the mind of Christ in order to have true Godly wisdom, obtain understanding from the Holy Spirit and revelatory knowledge from God the Father. With these three Godly characteristics we can move ahead in this life into perfection in Christ. We must obtain these three characteristics from God in the order that God set them forth; wisdom from Jesus, then understanding from the Holy Spirit and finally the revelatory knowledge of God the Father. Without these three Godly characteristics, people will continue to operate in the worldly forms of wisdom, understanding and knowledge that will lead them into foolishness, misunderstanding and ignorance. People who partake in the latter demonic characteristics, (whether or not they call themselves Christian) will end up in hell and eventually the lake of fire. The main reason this will be the case is that these people LIE. It is amazing to see how people will lie and think that it is okay and that God will not have a problem with this activity. People even try to minimize lying by dividing lies into categories such as ‘little white lies’ versus, in their opinion, worse kinds of lies. To God a lie is a lie and He will have none of it, because Satan is a liar and the father of lies. Anyone who lies is by definition a child of the devil. As we said before, humans are the potential replacements for the fallen angels and if someone wants to prove that they are NOT of the kingdom of God, there is no better way to do that than to lie! **Anyone who lies, even what they may deem insignificant lies, WILL end up in the lake of fire,** (see Revelation 21:8 above). People may not like this concept, but it is the truth nonetheless. It*

---

<sup>208</sup>The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

*is high time that someone stood up and spoke this truth boldly before the Christian church, because right now many so-called 'Christians' who sit week upon week in church and consider themselves safe from eternal destruction have another thing coming. This is one of the purposes of this teaching and many other writings that God has done through this author. **STOP LYING! Stop lying to God, to His people and to yourselves. Your eternity is at stake. No human being who lies will by any means make it into the kingdom of God.***

*God revealed to me that there are three basic reasons that a person will tell a lie -*

- 1. They want to justify their position.*
- 2. They want to look good in the eyes of other people.*
- 3. They want something that they think they will not be able to get without lying.*

*Virtually every lie can be placed into one of these three categories or a combination thereof. There are also human 'signals' in mannerism and speech characteristics that will reveal that someone is telling a lie. Some of these are words such as, 'I'm only saying...', 'I'm just saying...', 'What I'm trying to say is...', 'Well...', 'I'm just kidding', 'I was only joking', etc. When a person is telling a lie, one will often notice the liar begin to speak with a change of voice inflection to a louder volume and/or a higher pitch. Though sometimes it is used in speech unrelated to lying, the word 'just' is one of the most common indicators, (along with a 'high voice') that a person is telling a lie. This is because the word 'just' is signaling a 'justification', (category 1 lie). A lie may be accompanied by involuntary facial features or gestures such as looking up and to the left while they think of a lie to speak, or subconsciously nodding in confirmation as they verbally deny a charge against them. Anger is a big indicator of someone who is lying. Because they are lying and the person that they are lying to may not be 'buying it', they will go into a fit of rage in support of the lie. Outbursts of wrath, are works of the flesh as we saw in Galatians 5:19 above. These outbursts often accompany lies. These and other things can be tip-offs to the fact that someone is lying. God will know even if we are fooled. This is where people do not understand the severity of what they are doing when they lie, especially when they lie to obedient children of God. This lying carries a much stiffer penalty because they are not only lying to another person, but they are lying to God who resides inside within the true Christian. Common examples of lies that people tell without even thinking about it is that they will tell someone that they will meet them at such and such a time and either be late or not show up at all. Another example is that people will verbally commit to do something and never do it. Or, they will tell the authorities that they will obey the traffic laws in order to be granted a driver's license and then when they get the license, they will have little regard for the speed limit, stop signs, etc. These things are unacceptable to God. **By lying, people confirm that they are children of the devil who will clearly not understand these things we are speaking about here, nor agree with them. For the rest of us who are truly God's children and walk in the truth of God's love through Jesus Christ, we will be made free and come to the Father by way of this same truth, which is Jesus, (see I John 4:6, v.20, Revelation 21:7-8 above, John 8:21-59, 14:6, Acts 5:1-11 and Romans chapter 13).***

**John 8:21-59 -**

<sup>21</sup>Then Jesus said to them again, “I am going away, and you will seek Me, and will die in your sin. Where I go you cannot come.” <sup>22</sup>So the Jews said, “Will He kill Himself, because He says, ‘Where I go you cannot come’?” <sup>23</sup>And He said to them, “You are from beneath; I am from above. You are of this world; I am not of this world. <sup>24</sup>“Therefore I said to you that you will die in your sins; for if you do not believe that I am *He*, you will die in your sins.” <sup>25</sup>Then they said to Him, “Who are You?” And Jesus said to them, “Just what I have been saying to you from the beginning. <sup>26</sup>“I have many things to say and to judge concerning you, but He who sent Me is true; and I speak to the world those things which I heard from Him.” <sup>27</sup>They did not understand that He spoke to them of the Father. <sup>28</sup>Then Jesus said to them, “When you lift up the Son of Man, then you will know that I am *He*, and *that* I do nothing of Myself; but as My Father taught Me, I speak these things. <sup>29</sup>“And He who sent Me is with Me. The Father has not left Me alone, for I always do those things that please Him.”

<sup>30</sup>As He spoke these words, many believed in Him. <sup>31</sup>Then Jesus said to those Jews who believed Him, “If you abide in My word, you are My disciples indeed. <sup>32</sup>“And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.” <sup>33</sup>They answered Him, “We are Abraham’s descendants, and have never been in bondage to anyone. How *can* you say, ‘You will be made free’?” <sup>34</sup>Jesus answered them, “**Most assuredly, I say to you, whoever commits sin is a slave of sin.** <sup>35</sup>“**And a slave does not abide in the house forever, but a son abides forever.** <sup>36</sup>“**Therefore if the Son makes you free, you shall be free indeed.**

<sup>37</sup>“I know that you are Abraham’s descendants, but you seek to kill Me, because My word has no place in you. <sup>38</sup>“I speak what I have seen with My Father, and you do what you have seen with your father.” <sup>39</sup>They answered and said to Him, “Abraham is our father.” Jesus said to them, “If you were Abraham’s children, you would do the works of Abraham. <sup>40</sup>“But now you seek to kill Me, a Man who has told you the truth which I heard from God. Abraham did not do this. <sup>41</sup>“You do the deeds of your father.” Then they said to Him, “We were not born of fornication; we have one Father—God.” <sup>42</sup>Jesus said to them, “**If God were your Father, you would love Me, for I proceeded forth and came from God; nor have I come of Myself, but He sent Me.** <sup>43</sup>“**Why do you not understand My speech? Because you are not able to listen to My word.** <sup>44</sup>“**You are of *your* father the devil, and the desires of your father you want to do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and *does not* stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own *resources*, for he is a liar and the father of it.** <sup>45</sup>“**But because I tell the truth, you do not believe Me.** <sup>46</sup>“**Which of you convicts Me of sin? And if I tell the truth, why do you not believe Me?** <sup>47</sup>“**He who is of God hears God’s words; therefore you do not hear, because you are not of God.**”

<sup>48</sup>Then the Jews answered and said to Him, “Do we not say rightly that You are a Samaritan and have a demon?” <sup>49</sup>Jesus answered, “I do not have a demon; but I honor My Father, and you dishonor Me. <sup>50</sup>“**And I do not seek My *own* glory; there is One who seeks and judges.** <sup>51</sup>“**Most assuredly, I say to you, if anyone keeps My word he shall never see death.**” <sup>52</sup>Then the Jews said to Him, “Now we know that You have a demon!

Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and You say, 'If anyone keeps My word he shall never taste death.'<sup>53</sup> "Are You greater than our father Abraham, who is dead? And the prophets are dead. Whom do You make Yourself out to be?"<sup>54</sup> Jesus answered, "If I honor Myself, My honor is nothing. It is My Father who honors Me, of whom you say that He is your God."<sup>55</sup> "Yet you have not known Him, but I know Him. And if I say, 'I do not know Him,' I shall be a liar like you; but I do know Him and keep His word."<sup>56</sup> "Your father Abraham rejoiced to see My day, and he saw *it* and was glad."<sup>57</sup> Then the Jews said to Him, "You are not yet fifty years old, and have You seen Abraham?"<sup>58</sup> Jesus said to them, "Most assuredly, I say to you, before Abraham was, I AM."<sup>59</sup> Then they took up stones to throw at Him; but Jesus hid Himself and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by.<sup>209</sup>

### John 14:6 -

<sup>6</sup>Jesus said to him, "I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me."<sup>210</sup>

### Acts 5:1-11 -

<sup>1</sup>But a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession. <sup>2</sup>And he kept back *part* of the proceeds, his wife also being aware *of it*, and brought a certain part and laid *it* at the apostles' feet. <sup>3</sup>But Peter said, "Ananias, why has Satan filled your heart to lie to the Holy Spirit and keep back *part* of the price of the land for yourself? <sup>4</sup>"While it remained, was it not your own? And after it was sold, was it not in your own control? Why have you conceived this thing in your heart? **You have not lied to men but to God.**" <sup>5</sup>Then Ananias, hearing these words, fell down and breathed his last. So great fear came upon all those who heard these things. <sup>6</sup>And the young men arose and wrapped him up, carried *him* out, and buried *him*. <sup>7</sup>Now it was about three hours later when his wife came in, not knowing what had happened. <sup>8</sup>And Peter answered her, "Tell me whether you sold the land for so much?" She said, "Yes, for so much." <sup>9</sup>Then Peter said to her, "How is it that you have agreed together to test the Spirit of the Lord? Look, the feet of those who have buried your husband *are* at the door, and they will carry you out." <sup>10</sup>Then immediately she fell down at his feet and breathed her last. And the young men came in and found her dead, and carrying *her* out, buried *her* by her husband. <sup>11</sup>So great fear came upon all the church and upon all who heard these things.<sup>211</sup>

### Romans Chapter 13 -

#### Chapter 13

---

<sup>209</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>210</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>211</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.



<sup>1</sup>Let every soul be subject to the governing authorities. For there is no authority except from God, and the authorities that exist are appointed by God. <sup>2</sup>Therefore whoever resists the authority resists the ordinance of God, and those who resist will bring judgment on themselves. <sup>3</sup>For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to evil. Do you want to be unafraid of the authority? Do what is good, and you will have praise from the same. <sup>4</sup>For he is God's minister to you for good. But if you do evil, be afraid; for he does not bear the sword in vain; for he is God's minister, an avenger to *execute* wrath on him who practices evil. <sup>5</sup>Therefore *you* must be subject, not only because of wrath but also for conscience' sake. <sup>6</sup>For because of this you also pay taxes, for they are God's ministers attending continually to this very thing. <sup>7</sup>Render therefore to all their due: taxes to whom taxes *are due*, customs to whom customs, fear to whom fear, honor to whom honor.

<sup>8</sup>Owe no one anything except to love one another, for he who loves another has fulfilled the law. <sup>9</sup>For the commandments, "You shall not commit adultery," "You shall not murder," "You shall not steal," "You shall not bear false witness," "You shall not covet," and if *there is* any other commandment, are *all* summed up in this saying, namely, "You shall love your neighbor as yourself." <sup>10</sup>**Love does no harm to a neighbor; therefore love is the fulfillment of the law.**

<sup>11</sup>And *do* this, knowing the time, that now *it is* high time to awake out of sleep; for now our salvation *is* nearer than when we *first* believed. <sup>12</sup>The night is far spent, the day is at hand. **Therefore let us cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armor of light.** <sup>13</sup>Let us walk properly, as in the day, not in revelry and drunkenness, not in lewdness and lust, not in strife and envy. <sup>14</sup>**But put on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make no provision for the flesh, to *fulfill its* lusts.**<sup>212</sup>

*By the grace or power of God, we must overcome the works of the flesh in order to enter the kingdom of God, (see Revelation 21:7 above). People who think they can lie, (even 'small' lies) and get away with it will be sadly mistaken when Jesus comes back, or they die and find themselves in hell awaiting the lake of fire on Judgment Day, (see Revelation 21:8 above). Jesus is the TRUTH and we must abide in Him in order to be able to overcome these things. This is faith. It is through Jesus and the glory of the Father, with the help of the Holy Spirit that we can become PERFECTED in Christ. The GLORY of God is the REVELATORY KNOWLEDGE of the Father. Once we receive the WISDOM of God through salvation in Jesus, then this opens the door for us to receive UNDERSTANDING from the Holy Spirit and finally the door will also be open for us to receive the REVELATORY KNOWLEDGE from the Father, (i.e., the glory of God). This is how the process of perfection in Christ Jesus and eternal salvation in the presence of God works. The church at large has ignored this concept and this is the reason that most Christians live defeated, sinful lives. They are trying to receive the blessings of God without paying the price of obedience and sacrifice in order to get where God wants them to be, so that they can receive His blessings. PERFECTION in Christ is NOT an option, it is a requirement! In order to get to the perfected state in Jesus in this life, (i.e., the 'Life in Christ') one has to follow the pattern established by God as laid out in His Word. This*

---

<sup>212</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.*

*is through WISDOM, UNDERSTANDING and KNOWLEDGE that comes from God and by fully operating in our ministry gifts of apostle, prophet, evangelist, pastor and teacher. This is the way that the church will become perfected in Jesus and become 'one' with God. It is the only way that He will come back, (see Ephesians 4:11-16 above and John 17:20-26).*

### **John 17:20-26 -**

**<sup>20</sup>“I do not pray for these alone, but also for those who will believe in Me through their word; <sup>21</sup>“that they all may be one, as You, Father, are in Me, and I in You; that they also may be one in Us, that the world may believe that You sent Me. <sup>22</sup>“And the glory which You gave Me I have given them, that they may be one just as We are one: <sup>23</sup>“I in them, and You in Me; that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may know that You have sent Me, and have loved them as You have loved Me. <sup>24</sup>“Father, I desire that they also whom You gave Me may be with Me where I am, that they may behold My glory which You have given Me; for You loved Me before the foundation of the world. <sup>25</sup>“O righteous Father! The world has not known You, but I have known You; and these have known that You sent Me. <sup>26</sup>“And I have declared to them Your name, and will declare *it*, that the love with which You loved Me may be in them, and I in them.”<sup>213</sup>**

*As we said above, the knowledge that comes from God the Father is the 'light' that will 'illuminate' our minds and open our spiritual eyes so that we can see what God is doing in the earth through mankind and His plan for us. The knowledge of the Father is in this sense the same as His glory. It is this glory or revelatory knowledge that is necessary for us to become perfected in Christ. The glory of God is represented in the earth by the blood of Jesus. **Therefore, without the 'blood' of Jesus that we partake in by taking the wine of the Lord's Supper, (and we should be taking it daily when possible) people CANNOT properly understand the Word of God.** Unfortunately very few will receive these things because they have been spiritually 'blinded' by the enemy, or in their rebellion, God has 'blinded' them to the truth because of their stubbornness of doing things their own way. These spiritually blind people follow their spiritually blind church leaders and they will both end up in destruction because this path is the path of pride and rebellion. They are hypocrites and liars and therefore they really are children of the devil. It is no different today than it was in Jesus' day. The same demonic spirit of pride and hypocrisy operates through the leaders of the Christian church today that operated through the Pharisees and Sadducees in Jesus day. The sad thing is that most 'Christians' are IGNORANT of their pitiful state, because they refuse to receive these truths! They would rather wallow in their false glory and prideful MISUNDERSTANDING of God and His true Word, than repent of their ways and receive the truth. It is through their lack of Godly knowledge, (i.e., ignorance) that they are destroyed by sickness, financial lack and other disasters in their lives and the lives of their loved ones. This mess is propagated by the leaders, (or shepherds) of the church,*

---

<sup>213</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.*

*(or the flock of 'sheep'). These church leaders cannot get the people healed or delivered from their miserable circumstances, because they live and teach a lie and do not really have true wisdom, understanding and knowledge that come from God. Most of the people in the church also refuse help, (and they prevent the few who would receive help through the truth) because they have so much faith in their false leaders that they do not know the truth when it is presented to them. Their 'water', (which represents the Word of God) is 'muddied' by their lies, hypocrisy and false doctrines. God will hold these people accountable, (especially the church leaders) and will Himself raise replacements for the stubbornly disobedient 'Christians'. These 'replacements' will obey God no matter the cost. These replacement people are represented by the 144,000, (probably men not counting women and children) spoken of in the book of Revelation. They will be spiritual 'virgins', as they will not live the Babylonian lifestyle of credit, debt and loving material things, which is 'harlotry' or 'adultery' against God. The 144,000 and their families will learn to hear from God and simply believe Him and with His help they will be very obedient to Him. They will abide in Christ in the fashion that we discussed earlier and through this abiding in Him they will become 'perfected' or mature in Him. These will be the 'firstfruits' of the end-time true church of Christ known as the 'Philadelphia church'. The Philadelphia church will NOT go through the great tribulation, but the rest of the Christians will go through part or all of it and will be persecuted by the Antichrist. Most Christians will suffer, be put in prison or die during the great tribulation. Multitudes of Christians will come out of the great tribulation having become 'perfected' and 'washed clean' through these sufferings and the 'blood' of Jesus that will have brought illumination to them about the err of their ways. They will repent and begin to walk as the 144,000 learned to walk. They will live the 'life in Christ'; the life of perfection.*

*Many Christian leaders today teach a false doctrine called the 'pre-tribulation rapture' theory. This theory says that the Christian church will be 'raptured' or taken out of the earth BEFORE the Antichrist comes on the scene and before the great tribulation begins. This theory goes against what the Word of God says and also negates the purpose that God has for the great tribulation. The great tribulation will be a time of persecution of the saints of God, (i.e., Christians) will last three and one half years and will be perpetrated at the hands of the devil working through the Antichrist, (or 'the Beast'). The great tribulation is designed to force God's people to become perfected or mature in Christ. It will effectively 'sift' God's people and thus separate the wheat from the chaff. God designed the great tribulation for today's rebellious church that is full of pride and doctrines of demons. The great tribulation is designed to force the Christian church into a purified, perfected state so that Jesus can come back, (see the teachings, 'Faith is Truth', 'Life in Christ', 'KNOWLEDGE - The Key to Perfection', 'The Real 666', 'The Trouble that Lies Just Ahead', 'Revelation Revealed', the book, Who Said That You Should be Perfect?, Hosea 4:6, Ephesians 4:11-16, chapter 5 above, Daniel 7:15-27, 8:23-26, 11:20-35, 12:5-13, Ezekiel chapter 34, Matthew 15:1-20, chapter 23, 24:3-51, Luke 6:39-49, 21:7-38, John 12:35-50, II Corinthians chapters 3-4, I John 2:1-11, Revelation 3:7-13, chapter 7, 11:1-2 and 12:1-14:13).*

**Daniel 7:15-27 -**

<sup>15</sup>“I, Daniel, was grieved in my spirit within *my* body, and the visions of my head troubled me. <sup>16</sup>“I came near to one of those who stood by, and asked him the truth of all this. So he told me and made known to me the interpretation of these things: <sup>17</sup>“Those great beasts, which are four, *are* four kings *which* arise out of the earth. <sup>18</sup>“But the saints of the Most High shall receive the kingdom, and possess the kingdom forever, even forever and ever.” <sup>19</sup>“Then I wished to know the truth about the fourth beast, which was different from all the others, exceedingly dreadful, *with* its teeth of iron and its nails of bronze, *which* devoured, broke in pieces, and trampled the residue with its feet; <sup>20</sup>“and the ten horns that *were* on its head, and the other *horn* which came up, before which three fell, namely, that horn which had eyes and a mouth which spoke pompous words, whose appearance *was* greater than his fellows. <sup>21</sup>“**I was watching; and the same horn was making war against the saints, and prevailing against them,** <sup>22</sup>“**until the Ancient of Days came, and a judgment was made *in favor* of the saints of the Most High, and the time came for the saints to possess the kingdom.**

<sup>23</sup>“Thus he said:

‘The fourth beast shall be  
A fourth kingdom on earth,  
Which shall be different from all *other* kingdoms,  
And shall devour the whole earth,  
Trample it and break it in pieces.

<sup>24</sup> The ten horns *are* ten kings  
*Who* shall arise from this kingdom.  
And another shall rise after them;  
He shall be different from the first *ones*,  
And shall subdue three kings.

<sup>25</sup> **He shall speak *pompous* words against the Most High,  
Shall persecute the saints of the Most High,  
And shall intend to change times and law.  
Then *the saints* shall be given into his hand  
For a time and times and half a time.**

<sup>26</sup> ‘But the court shall be seated,  
And they shall take away his dominion,  
To consume and destroy *it* forever.

<sup>27</sup> Then the kingdom and dominion,  
And the greatness of the kingdoms under the whole heaven,  
Shall be given to the people, the saints of the Most High.  
His kingdom *is* an everlasting kingdom,  
And all dominions shall serve and obey Him.’<sup>214</sup>

### Daniel 8:23-26 -

<sup>23</sup> “And in the latter time of their kingdom,  
When the transgressors have reached their fullness,

---

<sup>214</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

A king shall arise,  
 Having fierce features,  
 Who understands sinister schemes.  
 24 His power shall be mighty, but not by his own power;  
 He shall destroy fearfully,  
 And shall prosper and thrive;  
**He shall destroy the mighty, and *also* the holy people.**  
 25 “Through his cunning  
 He shall cause deceit to prosper under his rule;  
 And he shall exalt *himself* in his heart.  
 He shall destroy many in *their* prosperity.  
 He shall even rise against the Prince of princes;  
 But he shall be broken without *human* means.  
 26 “And the vision of the evenings and mornings  
 Which was told is true;  
 Therefore seal up the vision,  
 For *it refers* to many days *in the future*.”<sup>215</sup>

### Daniel 11:20-35 -

<sup>20</sup>“There shall arise in his place one who imposes taxes *on* the glorious kingdom; but within a few days he shall be destroyed, but not in anger or in battle. <sup>21</sup>“And in his place shall arise a vile person, to whom they will not give the honor of royalty; but he shall come in peaceably, and seize the kingdom by intrigue. <sup>22</sup>“With the force of a flood they shall be swept away from before him and be broken, and also the prince of the covenant. <sup>23</sup>“And after the league *is made* with him he shall act deceitfully, for he shall come up and become strong with a small *number of* people. <sup>24</sup>“He shall enter peaceably, even into the richest places of the province; and he shall do *what* his fathers have not done, nor his forefathers: he shall disperse among them the plunder, spoil, and riches; and he shall devise his plans against the strongholds, but *only* for a time. <sup>25</sup>“He shall stir up his power and his courage against the king of the South with a great army. And the king of the South shall be stirred up to battle with a very great and mighty army; but he shall not stand, for they shall devise plans against him. <sup>26</sup>“Yes, those who eat of the portion of his delicacies shall destroy him; his army shall be swept away, and many shall fall down slain. <sup>27</sup>“Both these kings’ hearts *shall be* bent on evil, and they shall speak lies at the same table; but it shall not prosper, for the end *will still be* at the appointed time. <sup>28</sup>“While returning to his land with great riches, his heart shall be *moved* against the holy covenant; so he shall do *damage* and return to his own land. <sup>29</sup>“At the appointed time he shall return and go toward the south; but it shall not be like the former or the latter. <sup>30</sup>“For ships from Cyprus shall come against him; therefore he shall be grieved, and return in rage against the holy covenant, and do *damage*. So he shall return and show regard for those who forsake the holy covenant. <sup>31</sup>“**And forces shall be mustered by him, and they shall defile the sanctuary fortress; then they shall take away the daily *sacrifices*,**

---

<sup>215</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

and place *there* the abomination of desolation. <sup>32</sup>“Those who do wickedly against the covenant he shall corrupt with flattery; but the people who know their God shall be strong, and carry out *great exploits*. <sup>33</sup>“And those of the people who understand shall instruct many; yet *for many days* they shall fall by sword and flame, by captivity and plundering. <sup>34</sup>“Now when they fall, they shall be aided with a little help; but many shall join with them by intrigue. <sup>35</sup>“And *some* of those of understanding shall fall, to refine them, purify *them*, and make *them* white, *until* the time of the end; because *it is* still for the appointed time.<sup>216</sup>

### Daniel 12:5-13 -

<sup>5</sup>Then I, Daniel, looked; and there stood two others, one on this riverbank and the other on that riverbank. <sup>6</sup>And *one* said to the man clothed in linen, who *was* above the waters of the river, “How long shall the fulfillment of these wonders *be*?” <sup>7</sup>**Then I heard the man clothed in linen, who *was* above the waters of the river, when he held up his right hand and his left hand to heaven, and swore by Him who lives forever, that *it shall be* for a time, times, and half a time; and when the power of the holy people has been completely shattered, all these *things* shall be finished.** <sup>8</sup>Although I heard, I did not understand. Then I said, “My lord, what *shall be* the end of these *things*?” <sup>9</sup>And he said, “Go *your way*, Daniel, for the words *are* closed up and sealed till the time of the end. <sup>10</sup>“**Many shall be purified, made white, and refined, but the wicked shall do wickedly; and none of the wicked shall understand, but the wise shall understand.** <sup>11</sup>“**And from the time *that* the daily *sacrifice* is taken away, and the abomination of desolation is set up, *there shall be* one thousand two hundred and ninety days.** <sup>12</sup>“**Blessed *is* he who waits, and comes to the one thousand three hundred and thirty-five days.** <sup>13</sup>“But you, go *your way* till the end; for you shall rest, and will arise to your inheritance at the end of the days.”<sup>217</sup>

### Ezekiel Chapter 34 -

#### Chapter 34

<sup>1</sup>And the word of the LORD came to me, saying, <sup>2</sup>“Son of man, prophesy against the shepherds of Israel, prophesy and say to them, ‘Thus says the Lord GOD to the shepherds: “Woe to the shepherds of Israel who feed themselves! Should not the shepherds feed the flocks? <sup>3</sup>“You eat the fat and clothe yourselves with the wool; you slaughter the fatlings, *but* you do not feed the flock. <sup>4</sup>“The weak you have not strengthened, nor have you healed those who were sick, nor bound up the broken, nor brought back what was driven away, nor sought what was lost; but with force and cruelty you have ruled them. <sup>5</sup>“So they were scattered because *there was* no shepherd; and they became food for all the beasts of the field when they were scattered. <sup>6</sup>“My sheep wandered through all the

---

<sup>216</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>217</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

mountains, and on every high hill; yes, My flock was scattered over the whole face of the earth, and no one was seeking or searching *for them*.”

<sup>7</sup>“Therefore, you shepherds, hear the word of the LORD: <sup>8</sup>“*as* I live,” says the Lord GOD, “surely because My flock became a prey, and My flock became food for every beast of the field, because *there was* no shepherd, nor did My shepherds search for My flock, but the shepherds fed themselves and did not feed My flock”—<sup>9</sup>“therefore, O shepherds, hear the word of the LORD! <sup>10</sup>“Thus says the Lord GOD: “Behold, I *am* against the shepherds, and I will require My flock at their hand; I will cause them to cease feeding the sheep, and the shepherds shall feed themselves no more; for I will deliver My flock from their mouths, that they may no longer be food for them.”

<sup>11</sup>“For thus says the Lord GOD: “Indeed I Myself will search for My sheep and seek them out. <sup>12</sup>“As a shepherd seeks out his flock on the day he is among his scattered sheep, so will I seek out My sheep and deliver them from all the places where they were scattered on a cloudy and dark day. <sup>13</sup>“And I will bring them out from the peoples and gather them from the countries, and will bring them to their own land; I will feed them on the mountains of Israel, in the valleys and in all the inhabited places of the country. <sup>14</sup>“I will feed them in good pasture, and their fold shall be on the high mountains of Israel. There they shall lie down in a good fold and feed in rich pasture on the mountains of Israel. <sup>15</sup>“I will feed My flock, and I will make them lie down,” says the Lord GOD. <sup>16</sup>“I will seek what was lost and bring back what was driven away, bind up the broken and strengthen what was sick; but I will destroy the fat and the strong, and feed them in judgment.”

<sup>17</sup>“And *as for* you, O My flock, thus says the Lord GOD: “Behold, I shall judge between sheep and sheep, between rams and goats. <sup>18</sup>“*Is it* too little for you to have eaten up the good pasture, that you must tread down with your feet the residue of your pasture—and to have drunk of the clear waters, that you must foul the residue with your feet? <sup>19</sup>“And *as for* My flock, they eat what you have trampled with your feet, and they drink what you have fouled with your feet.”

<sup>20</sup>“Therefore thus says the Lord GOD to them: “Behold, I Myself will judge between the fat and the lean sheep. <sup>21</sup>“Because you have pushed with side and shoulder, butted all the weak ones with your horns, and scattered them abroad, <sup>22</sup>“therefore I will save My flock, and they shall no longer be a prey; and I will judge between sheep and sheep. <sup>23</sup>“I will establish one shepherd over them, and he shall feed them—My servant David. He shall feed them and be their shepherd. <sup>24</sup>“And I, the LORD, will be their God, and My servant David a prince among them; I, the LORD, have spoken.

<sup>25</sup>“I will make a covenant of peace with them, and cause wild beasts to cease from the land; and they will dwell safely in the wilderness and sleep in the woods. <sup>26</sup>“I will make them and the places all around My hill a blessing; and I will cause showers to come down in their season; there shall be showers of blessing. <sup>27</sup>“Then the trees of the field shall yield their fruit, and the earth shall yield her increase. They shall be safe in their land; and they shall know that I *am* the LORD, when I have broken the bands of their yoke and delivered them from the hand of those who enslaved them. <sup>28</sup>“And they shall no longer be a prey for the nations, nor shall beasts of the land devour them; but they shall dwell safely, and no one shall make *them* afraid. <sup>29</sup>“I will raise up for them a garden of renown, and they shall no longer be consumed with hunger in the land, nor bear the shame of the Gentiles anymore. <sup>30</sup>“Thus they shall know that I, the LORD their God, *am* with them, and

they, the house of Israel, *are* My people,” says the Lord GOD.’ ”<sup>31</sup>“You are My flock, the flock of My pasture; you *are* men, *and* I *am* your God,” says the Lord GOD.<sup>218</sup>

### Matthew 15:1-20 -

<sup>1</sup>Then the scribes and Pharisees who were from Jerusalem came to Jesus, saying,  
<sup>2</sup>“Why do Your disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? For they do not wash their hands when they eat bread.”<sup>3</sup>He answered and said to them, “**Why do you also transgress the commandment of God because of your tradition?** <sup>4</sup>“For God commanded, saying, ‘Honor your father and your mother’; and, ‘He who curses father or mother, let him be put to death.’ <sup>5</sup>“But you say, ‘Whoever says to his father or mother, “Whatever profit you might have received from me *is* a gift to God”— <sup>6</sup>“then he need not honor his father or mother.’ Thus you have made the commandment of God of no effect by your tradition. <sup>7</sup>“Hypocrites! Well did Isaiah prophesy about you, saying:

<sup>8</sup>           ‘These people draw near to Me with their mouth,  
          And honor Me with *their* lips,  
          But their heart is far from Me.  
<sup>9</sup>           And in vain they worship Me,  
          Teaching *as* doctrines the commandments of men.’ ”

<sup>10</sup>When He had called the multitude to *Himself*, He said to them, “Hear and understand: <sup>11</sup>“Not what goes into the mouth defiles a man; but what comes out of the mouth, this defiles a man.” <sup>12</sup>Then His disciples came and said to Him, “Do You know that the Pharisees were offended when they heard this saying?” <sup>13</sup>But He answered and said, “Every plant which My heavenly Father has not planted will be uprooted. <sup>14</sup>“Let them alone. **They are blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind leads the blind, both will fall into a ditch.**” <sup>15</sup>Then Peter answered and said to Him, “Explain this parable to us.” <sup>16</sup>So Jesus said, “Are you also still without understanding? <sup>17</sup>“Do you not yet understand that whatever enters the mouth goes into the stomach and is eliminated? <sup>18</sup>“**But those things which proceed out of the mouth come from the heart, and they defile a man.** <sup>19</sup>“**For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies.** <sup>20</sup>“**These are *the things* which defile a man, but to eat with unwashed hands does not defile a man.”<sup>219</sup>**

### Matthew Chapter 23 -

#### Chapter 23

<sup>1</sup>Then Jesus spoke to the multitudes and to His disciples, <sup>2</sup>saying: “The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses’ seat. <sup>3</sup>“Therefore whatever they tell you to observe, *that* observe and do, but do not do according to their works; for they say, and do not do. <sup>4</sup>“For they bind heavy burdens, hard to bear, and lay *them* on men’s shoulders; but they

---

<sup>218</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>219</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.



*themselves* will not move them with one of their fingers. <sup>5</sup>“But all their works they do to be seen by men. They make their phylacteries broad and enlarge the borders of their garments. <sup>6</sup>“They love the best places at feasts, the best seats in the synagogues, <sup>7</sup>“greetings in the marketplaces, and to be called by men, ‘Rabbi, Rabbi.’ <sup>8</sup>“But you, do not be called ‘Rabbi’; for One is your Teacher, the Christ, and you are all brethren. <sup>9</sup>“Do not call anyone on earth your father; for One is your Father, He who is in heaven. <sup>10</sup>“And do not be called teachers; for One is your Teacher, the Christ. <sup>11</sup>“But he who is greatest among you shall be your servant. <sup>12</sup>“And whoever exalts himself will be humbled, and he who humbles himself will be exalted. <sup>13</sup>“But woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you shut up the kingdom of heaven against men; for you neither go in *yourselves*, nor do you allow those who are entering to go in. <sup>14</sup>“Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you devour widows’ houses, and for a pretense make long prayers. Therefore you will receive greater condemnation. <sup>15</sup>“Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you travel land and sea to win one proselyte, and when he is won, you make him twice as much a son of hell as yourselves. <sup>16</sup>“**Woe to you, blind guides, who say, ‘Whoever swears by the temple, it is nothing; but whoever swears by the gold of the temple, he is obliged to perform it.’** <sup>17</sup>“Fools and blind! For which is greater, the gold or the temple that sanctifies the gold? <sup>18</sup>“And, ‘Whoever swears by the altar, it is nothing; but whoever swears by the gift that is on it, he is obliged to perform it.’ <sup>19</sup>“Fools and blind! For which is greater, the gift or the altar that sanctifies the gift? <sup>20</sup>“Therefore he who swears by the altar, swears by it and by all things on it. <sup>21</sup>“He who swears by the temple, swears by it and by Him who dwells in it. <sup>22</sup>“And he who swears by heaven, swears by the throne of God and by Him who sits on it. <sup>23</sup>“Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have neglected the weightier *matters* of the law: justice and mercy and faith. These you ought to have done, without leaving the others undone. <sup>24</sup>“Blind guides, who strain out a gnat and swallow a camel! <sup>25</sup>“Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you cleanse the outside of the cup and dish, but inside they are full of extortion and self-indulgence. <sup>26</sup>“Blind Pharisee, first cleanse the inside of the cup and dish, that the outside of them may be clean also. <sup>27</sup>“Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you are like whitewashed tombs which indeed appear beautiful outwardly, but inside are full of dead *men’s* bones and all uncleanness. <sup>28</sup>“Even so you also outwardly appear righteous to men, but inside you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness. <sup>29</sup>“Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! Because you build the tombs of the prophets and adorn the monuments of the righteous, <sup>30</sup>“and say, ‘If we had lived in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets.’ <sup>31</sup>“Therefore you are witnesses against yourselves that you are sons of those who murdered the prophets. <sup>32</sup>“Fill up, then, the measure of your fathers’ *guilt*. <sup>33</sup>“Serpents, brood of vipers! How can you escape the condemnation of hell? <sup>34</sup>“Therefore, indeed, I send you prophets, wise men, and scribes: *some* of them you will kill and crucify, and *some* of them you will scourge in your synagogues and persecute from city to city, <sup>35</sup>“that on you may come all the righteous blood shed on the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel to the blood of Zechariah, son of Berechiah, whom you murdered between the temple and the altar. <sup>36</sup>“Assuredly, I say to you, all these things will come upon this generation.

<sup>37</sup>“O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, the one who kills the prophets and stones those who are sent to her! How often I wanted to gather your children together, as a hen gathers her chicks under *her* wings, but you were not willing! <sup>38</sup>“See! Your house is left to you desolate; <sup>39</sup>“for I say to you, you shall see Me no more till you say, ‘Blessed *is* He who comes in the name of the LORD!’ ”220

### Matthew 24:3-51 -

<sup>3</sup>Now as He sat on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came to Him privately, saying, “Tell us, when will these things be? And what *will be* the sign of Your coming, and of the end of the age?” <sup>4</sup>And Jesus answered and said to them: “Take heed that no one deceives you. <sup>5</sup>“For many will come in My name, saying, ‘I am the Christ,’ and will deceive many. <sup>6</sup>“And you will hear of wars and rumors of wars. See that you are not troubled; for all *these things* must come to pass, but the end is not yet. <sup>7</sup>“For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. And there will be famines, pestilences, and earthquakes in various places. <sup>8</sup>“All these *are* the beginning of sorrows. <sup>9</sup>“**Then they will deliver you up to tribulation and kill you, and you will be hated by all nations for My name’s sake.** <sup>10</sup>“**And then many will be offended, will betray one another, and will hate one another.** <sup>11</sup>“Then many false prophets will rise up and deceive many. <sup>12</sup>“And because lawlessness will abound, the love of many will grow cold. <sup>13</sup>“But he who endures to the end shall be saved. <sup>14</sup>“And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached in all the world as a witness to all the nations, and then the end will come.

<sup>15</sup>“**Therefore when you see the ‘abomination of desolation,’ spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place” (whoever reads, let him understand),** <sup>16</sup>“**then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains.** <sup>17</sup>“**Let him who is on the housetop not go down to take anything out of his house.** <sup>18</sup>“**And let him who is in the field not go back to get his clothes.** <sup>19</sup>“**But woe to those who are pregnant and to those who are nursing babies in those days!** <sup>20</sup>“**And pray that your flight may not be in winter or on the Sabbath.** <sup>21</sup>“**For then there will be great tribulation, such as has not been since the beginning of the world until this time, no, nor ever shall be.** <sup>22</sup>“And unless those days were shortened, no flesh would be saved; but for the elect’s sake those days will be shortened. <sup>23</sup>“Then if anyone says to you, ‘Look, here *is* the Christ!’ or ‘There!’ do not believe *it*. <sup>24</sup>“For false christs and false prophets will rise and show great signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the elect. <sup>25</sup>“See, I have told you beforehand. <sup>26</sup>“Therefore if they say to you, ‘Look, He is in the desert!’ do not go out; *or* ‘Look, *He is* in the inner rooms!’ do not believe *it*. <sup>27</sup>“For as the lightning comes from the east and flashes to the west, so also will the coming of the Son of Man be. <sup>28</sup>“For wherever the carcass is, there the eagles will be gathered together.

<sup>29</sup>“Immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light; the stars will fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken. <sup>30</sup>“Then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in heaven, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. <sup>31</sup>“And He will send His angels with a great sound of

a trumpet, and they will gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

<sup>32</sup>“Now learn this parable from the fig tree: When its branch has already become tender and puts forth leaves, you know that summer *is* near. <sup>33</sup>“So you also, when you see all these things, know that it is near—at the doors! <sup>34</sup>“Assuredly, I say to you, this generation will by no means pass away till all these things take place. <sup>35</sup>“Heaven and earth will pass away, but My words will by no means pass away.

<sup>36</sup>“But of that day and hour no one knows, not even the angels of heaven, but My Father only. <sup>37</sup>“But as the days of Noah *were*, so also will the coming of the Son of Man be. <sup>38</sup>“For as in the days before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered the ark, <sup>39</sup>“and did not know until the flood came and took them all away, so also will the coming of the Son of Man be. <sup>40</sup>“Then two *men* will be in the field: one will be taken and the other left. <sup>41</sup>“Two *women* will be grinding at the mill: one will be taken and the other left. <sup>42</sup>“Watch therefore, for you do not know what hour your Lord is coming. <sup>43</sup>“But know this, that if the master of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched and not allowed his house to be broken into. <sup>44</sup>“Therefore you also be ready, for the Son of Man is coming at an hour you do not expect.

<sup>45</sup>“Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his master made ruler over his household, to give them food in due season? <sup>46</sup>“Blessed *is* that servant whom his master, when he comes, will find so doing. <sup>47</sup>“Assuredly, I say to you that he will make him ruler over all his goods. <sup>48</sup>“But if that evil servant says in his heart, ‘My master is delaying his coming,’ <sup>49</sup>“and begins to beat *his* fellow servants, and to eat and drink with the drunkards, <sup>50</sup>“the master of that servant will come on a day when he is not looking for *him* and at an hour that he is not aware of, <sup>51</sup>“and will cut him in two and appoint *him* his portion with the hypocrites. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. 221

#### Luke 6:39-49 -

<sup>39</sup>And He spoke a parable to them: **“Can the blind lead the blind? Will they not both fall into the ditch? <sup>40</sup>“A disciple is not above his teacher, but everyone who is perfectly trained will be like his teacher. <sup>41</sup>“And why do you look at the speck in your brother’s eye, but do not perceive the plank in your own eye? <sup>42</sup>“Or how can you say to your brother, ‘Brother, let me remove the speck that *is* in your eye,’ when you yourself do not see the plank that *is* in your own eye? Hypocrite! First remove the plank from your own eye, and then you will see clearly to remove the speck that *is* in your brother’s eye.**

<sup>43</sup>“For a good tree does not bear bad fruit, nor does a bad tree bear good fruit. <sup>44</sup>“For every tree is known by its own fruit. For *men* do not gather figs from thorns, nor do they gather grapes from a bramble bush. <sup>45</sup>“A good man out of the good treasure of his heart brings forth good; and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart brings forth evil. For out of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaks.

<sup>46</sup>“**But why do you call Me ‘Lord, Lord,’ and do not do the things which I say?**”  
<sup>47</sup>“Whoever comes to Me, and hears My sayings and does them, I will show you whom he is like: <sup>48</sup>“He is like a man building a house, who dug deep and laid the foundation on the rock. And when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently against that house, and could not shake it, for it was founded on the rock. <sup>49</sup>“But he who heard and did nothing is like a man who built a house on the earth without a foundation, against which the stream beat vehemently; and immediately it fell. And the ruin of that house was great.”<sup>222</sup>

### Luke 21:7-38 -

<sup>7</sup>So they asked Him, saying, “Teacher, but when will these things be? And what sign *will there be* when these things are about to take place?” <sup>8</sup>And He said: “Take heed that you not be deceived. For many will come in My name, saying, ‘I am *He*,’ and, ‘The time has drawn near.’ Therefore do not go after them. <sup>9</sup>“But when you hear of wars and commotions, do not be terrified; for these things must come to pass first, but the end *will not come* immediately.” <sup>10</sup>Then He said to them, “Nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. <sup>11</sup>“And there will be great earthquakes in various places, and famines and pestilences; and there will be fearful sights and great signs from heaven. <sup>12</sup>“**But before all these things, they will lay their hands on you and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues and prisons.** You will be brought before kings and rulers for My name’s sake. <sup>13</sup>“But it will turn out for you as an occasion for testimony. <sup>14</sup>“Therefore settle *it* in your hearts not to meditate beforehand on what you will answer; <sup>15</sup>“for I will give you a mouth and wisdom which all your adversaries will not be able to contradict or resist. <sup>16</sup>“You will be betrayed even by parents and brothers, relatives and friends; and they will put *some* of you to death. <sup>17</sup>“And you will be hated by all for My name’s sake. <sup>18</sup>“But not a hair of your head shall be lost. <sup>19</sup>“By your patience possess your souls.

<sup>20</sup>“**But when you see Jerusalem surrounded by armies, then know that its desolation is near.** <sup>21</sup>“**Then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains, let those who are in the midst of her depart, and let not those who are in the country enter her.** <sup>22</sup>“**For these are the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled.** <sup>23</sup>“**But woe to those who are pregnant and to those who are nursing babies in those days! For there will be great distress in the land and wrath upon this people.** <sup>24</sup>“**And they will fall by the edge of the sword, and be led away captive into all nations. And Jerusalem will be trampled by Gentiles until the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled.**

<sup>25</sup>“And there will be signs in the sun, in the moon, and in the stars; and on the earth distress of nations, with perplexity, the sea and the waves roaring; <sup>26</sup>“men’s hearts failing them from fear and the expectation of those things which are coming on the earth, for the powers of heaven will be shaken. <sup>27</sup>“Then they will see the Son of Man coming in a cloud with power and great glory. <sup>28</sup>“Now when these things begin to happen, look up and lift up your heads, because your redemption draws near.”

<sup>29</sup>Then He spoke to them a parable: “Look at the fig tree, and all the trees. <sup>30</sup>“When they are already budding, you see and know for yourselves that summer is now near. <sup>31</sup>“So you also, when you see these things happening, know that the kingdom of God is near. <sup>32</sup>“Assuredly, I say to you, this generation will by no means pass away till all things take place. <sup>33</sup>“Heaven and earth will pass away, but My words will by no means pass away.

<sup>34</sup>“But take heed to yourselves, lest your hearts be weighed down with carousing, drunkenness, and cares of this life, and that Day come on you unexpectedly. <sup>35</sup>“For it will come as a snare on all those who dwell on the face of the whole earth. <sup>36</sup>“**Watch therefore, and pray always that you may be counted worthy to escape all these things that will come to pass, and to stand before the Son of Man.**” <sup>37</sup>And in the daytime He was teaching in the temple, but at night He went out and stayed on the mountain called Olivet. <sup>38</sup>Then early in the morning all the people came to Him in the temple to hear Him. 223

### John 12:35-50 -

<sup>35</sup>Then Jesus said to them, **“A little while longer the light is with you. Walk while you have the light, lest darkness overtake you; he who walks in darkness does not know where he is going. <sup>36</sup>“While you have the light, believe in the light, that you may become sons of light.”** These things Jesus spoke, and departed, and was hidden from them.

<sup>37</sup>But although He had done so many signs before them, they did not believe in Him, <sup>38</sup>that the word of Isaiah the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spoke:

“Lord, who has believed our report?  
And to whom has the arm of the LORD been revealed?”

<sup>39</sup>Therefore they could not believe, because Isaiah said again:

<sup>40</sup> “He has blinded their eyes and hardened their hearts,  
Lest they should see with *their* eyes,  
Lest they should understand with *their* hearts and turn,  
So that I should heal them.”

<sup>41</sup>These things Isaiah said when he saw His glory and spoke of Him.

<sup>42</sup>Nevertheless even among the rulers many believed in Him, but because of the Pharisees they did not confess *Him*, lest they should be put out of the synagogue; <sup>43</sup>for they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God. <sup>44</sup>**Then Jesus cried out and said, “He who believes in Me, believes not in Me but in Him who sent Me. <sup>45</sup>“And he who sees Me sees Him who sent Me. <sup>46</sup>“I have come *as* a light into the world, that whoever believes in Me should not abide in darkness. <sup>47</sup>“And if anyone hears My words and does not believe, I do not judge him; for I did not come to judge the world but to save the world. <sup>48</sup>“He who rejects Me, and does not receive My words, has that which judges him—the word that I have spoken will judge him in the last day. <sup>49</sup>“For I have not spoken on My own *authority*; but the Father who sent Me gave Me**

**a command, what I should say and what I should speak. <sup>50</sup>“And I know that His command is everlasting life. Therefore, whatever I speak, just as the Father has told Me, so I speak.”<sup>224</sup>**

## II Corinthians Chapters 3-4 -

### Chapter 3

<sup>1</sup>Do we begin again to commend ourselves? Or do we need, as some *others*, epistles of commendation to you or *letters* of commendation from you? <sup>2</sup>You are our epistle written in our hearts, known and read by all men; <sup>3</sup>clearly *you are* an epistle of Christ, ministered by us, written not with ink but by the Spirit of the living God, not on tablets of stone but on tablets of flesh, *that is*, of the heart.

<sup>4</sup>And we have such trust through Christ toward God. <sup>5</sup>Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think of anything as *being* from ourselves, but our sufficiency *is* from God, <sup>6</sup>who also made us sufficient as ministers of the new covenant, not of the letter but of the Spirit; for the letter kills, but the Spirit gives life.

<sup>7</sup>But if the ministry of death, written *and* engraved on stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not look steadily at the face of Moses because of the glory of his countenance, which *glory* was passing away, <sup>8</sup>how will the ministry of the Spirit not be more glorious? <sup>9</sup>For if the ministry of condemnation *had* glory, the ministry of righteousness exceeds much more in glory. <sup>10</sup>For even what was made glorious had no glory in this respect, because of the glory that excels. <sup>11</sup>For if what is passing away *was* glorious, what remains *is* much more glorious. <sup>12</sup>Therefore, since we have such hope, we use great boldness of speech— <sup>13</sup>unlike Moses, *who* put a veil over his face so that the children of Israel could not look steadily at the end of what was passing away. <sup>14</sup>**But their minds were blinded. For until this day the same veil remains unlifted in the reading of the Old Testament, because the *veil* is taken away in Christ.** <sup>15</sup>**But even to this day, when Moses is read, a veil lies on their heart.** <sup>16</sup>Nevertheless when one turns to the Lord, the veil is taken away. <sup>17</sup>Now the Lord is the Spirit; and where the Spirit of the Lord *is*, there *is* liberty. <sup>18</sup>**But we all, with unveiled face, beholding as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are being transformed into the same image from glory to glory, just as by the Spirit of the Lord.**

### Chapter 4

<sup>1</sup>Therefore, since we have this ministry, as we have received mercy, we do not lose heart. <sup>2</sup>But we have renounced the hidden things of shame, not walking in craftiness nor handling the word of God deceitfully, but by manifestation of the truth commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God. <sup>3</sup>**But even if our gospel is veiled, it is veiled to those who are perishing,** <sup>4</sup>**whose minds the god of this age has blinded, who do not believe, lest the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine on them.** <sup>5</sup>**For we do not preach ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord, and ourselves your bondservants for Jesus' sake.** <sup>6</sup>For it is the God

---

<sup>224</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

**who commanded light to shine out of darkness, who has shone in our hearts to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ.**

<sup>7</sup>But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellence of the power may be of God and not of us. <sup>8</sup>*We are* hard pressed on every side, yet not crushed; *we are* perplexed, but not in despair; <sup>9</sup>persecuted, but not forsaken; struck down, but not destroyed—<sup>10</sup>always carrying about in the body the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life of Jesus also may be manifested in our body. <sup>11</sup>For we who live are always delivered to death for Jesus' sake, that the life of Jesus also may be manifested in our mortal flesh. <sup>12</sup>So then death is working in us, but life in you. <sup>13</sup>And since we have the same spirit of faith, according to what is written, "I believed and therefore I spoke," we also believe and therefore speak, <sup>14</sup>knowing that He who raised up the Lord Jesus will also raise us up with Jesus, and will present *us* with you. <sup>15</sup>For all things *are* for your sakes, that grace, having spread through the many, may cause thanksgiving to abound to the glory of God.

<sup>16</sup>Therefore we do not lose heart. Even though our outward man is perishing, yet the inward *man* is being renewed day by day. <sup>17</sup>**For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, is working for us a far more exceeding *and* eternal weight of glory, <sup>18</sup>while we do not look at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen. For the things which are seen *are* temporary, but the things which are not seen *are* eternal.**<sup>225</sup>

#### **I John 2:1-11 -**

<sup>1</sup>My little children, these things I write to you, so that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. <sup>2</sup>And He Himself is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only but also for the whole world.

<sup>3</sup>**Now by this we know that we know Him, if we keep His commandments. <sup>4</sup>He who says, "I know Him," and does not keep His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him. <sup>5</sup>But whoever keeps His word, truly the love of God is perfected in him. By this we know that we are in Him. <sup>6</sup>He who says he abides in Him ought himself also to walk just as He walked. <sup>7</sup>Brethren, I write no new commandment to you, but an old commandment which you have had from the beginning. The old commandment is the word which you heard from the beginning. <sup>8</sup>Again, a new commandment I write to you, which thing is true in Him and in you, because the darkness is passing away, and the true light is already shining. <sup>9</sup>He who says he is in the light, and hates his brother, is in darkness until now. <sup>10</sup>He who loves his brother abides in the light, and there is no cause for stumbling in him. <sup>11</sup>But he who hates his brother is in darkness and walks in darkness, and does not know where he is going, because the darkness has blinded his eyes.**<sup>226</sup>

#### **Revelation 3:7-13 -**

---

<sup>225</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>226</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>7</sup>“And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write, ‘These things says He who is holy, He who is true, ‘He who has the key of David, He who opens and no one shuts, and shuts and no one opens’”: <sup>8</sup>“I know your works. See, I have set before you an open door, and no one can shut it; for you have a little strength, have kept My word, and have not denied My name. <sup>9</sup>“Indeed I will make *those* of the synagogue of Satan, who say they are Jews and are not, but lie—indeed I will make them come and worship before your feet, and to know that I have loved you. <sup>10</sup>“**Because you have kept My command to persevere, I also will keep you from the hour of trial which shall come upon the whole world, to test those who dwell on the earth.** <sup>11</sup>“Behold, I am coming quickly! Hold fast what you have, that no one may take your crown. <sup>12</sup>“He who overcomes, I will make him a pillar in the temple of My God, and he shall go out no more. And I will write on him the name of My God and the name of the city of My God, the New Jerusalem, which comes down out of heaven from My God. And *I will write on him* My new name. <sup>13</sup>“He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.” ’227

## Revelation Chapter 7 -

### Chapter 7

<sup>1</sup>After these things I saw four angels standing at the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth, on the sea, or on any tree. <sup>2</sup>Then I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God. And he cried with a loud voice to the four angels to whom it was granted to harm the earth and the sea, <sup>3</sup>saying, “Do not harm the earth, the sea, or the trees till we have sealed the servants of our God on their foreheads.” <sup>4</sup>**And I heard the number of those who were sealed. One hundred and forty-four thousand of all the tribes of the children of Israel were sealed:**

- <sup>5</sup> of the tribe of Judah twelve thousand *were* sealed;
- of the tribe of Reuben twelve thousand *were* sealed;
- of the tribe of Gad twelve thousand *were* sealed;
- <sup>6</sup> of the tribe of Asher twelve thousand *were* sealed;
- of the tribe of Naphtali twelve thousand *were* sealed;
- of the tribe of Manasseh twelve thousand *were* sealed;
- <sup>7</sup> of the tribe of Simeon twelve thousand *were* sealed;
- of the tribe of Levi twelve thousand *were* sealed;
- of the tribe of Issachar twelve thousand *were* sealed;
- <sup>8</sup> of the tribe of Zebulun twelve thousand *were* sealed;
- of the tribe of Joseph twelve thousand *were* sealed;
- of the tribe of Benjamin twelve thousand *were* sealed.

<sup>9</sup>After these things I looked, and behold, a great multitude which no one could number, of all nations, tribes, peoples, and tongues, standing before the throne and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, with palm branches in their hands, <sup>10</sup>and



crying out with a loud voice, saying, “Salvation *belongs* to our God who sits on the throne, and to the Lamb!” <sup>11</sup>All the angels stood around the throne and the elders and the four living creatures, and fell on their faces before the throne and worshiped God, <sup>12</sup>saying:

“Amen! Blessing and glory and wisdom,  
Thanksgiving and honor and power and might,  
*Be* to our God forever and ever.  
Amen.”

<sup>13</sup>Then one of the elders answered, saying to me, “Who are these arrayed in white robes, and where did they come from?” <sup>14</sup>And I said to him, “Sir, you know.” So he said to me, “These are the ones who come out of the great tribulation, and washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb. <sup>15</sup>“Therefore they are before the throne of God, and serve Him day and night in His temple. And He who sits on the throne will dwell among them. <sup>16</sup>“They shall neither hunger anymore nor thirst anymore; the sun shall not strike them, nor any heat; <sup>17</sup>“for the Lamb who is in the midst of the throne will shepherd them and lead them to living fountains of waters. And God will wipe away every tear from their eyes.”<sup>228</sup>

#### Revelation 11:1-2 -

<sup>1</sup>Then I was given a reed like a measuring rod. And the angel stood, saying, “Rise and measure the temple of God, the altar, and those who worship there. <sup>2</sup>“**But leave out the court which is outside the temple, and do not measure it, for it has been given to the Gentiles. And they will tread the holy city underfoot for forty-two months.**<sup>229</sup>

#### Revelation 12:1-14:13 -

### Chapter 12

<sup>1</sup>Now a great sign appeared in heaven: a woman clothed with the sun, with the moon under her feet, and on her head a garland of twelve stars. <sup>2</sup>Then being with child, she cried out in labor and in pain to give birth. <sup>3</sup>And another sign appeared in heaven: behold, a great, fiery red dragon having seven heads and ten horns, and seven diadems on his heads. <sup>4</sup>His tail drew a third of the stars of heaven and threw them to the earth. And the dragon stood before the woman who was ready to give birth, to devour her Child as soon as it was born. <sup>5</sup>She bore a male Child who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron. And her Child was caught up to God and His throne. <sup>6</sup>**Then the woman fled into the wilderness, where she has a place prepared by God, that they should feed her there one thousand two hundred and sixty days.**

<sup>7</sup>And war broke out in heaven: Michael and his angels fought with the dragon; and the dragon and his angels fought, <sup>8</sup>but they did not prevail, nor was a place found for

---

<sup>228</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>229</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

them in heaven any longer. <sup>9</sup>So the great dragon was cast out, that serpent of old, called the Devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was cast to the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. <sup>10</sup>Then I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, "Now salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of His Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren, who accused them before our God day and night, has been cast down. <sup>11</sup>"And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony, and they did not love their lives to the death. <sup>12</sup>"Therefore rejoice, O heavens, and you who dwell in them! Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and the sea! For the devil has come down to you, having great wrath, because he knows that he has a short time."

<sup>13</sup>**Now when the dragon saw that he had been cast to the earth, he persecuted the woman who gave birth to the male *Child*.** <sup>14</sup>**But the woman was given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness to her place, where she is nourished for a time and times and half a time, from the presence of the serpent.** <sup>15</sup>**So the serpent spewed water out of his mouth like a flood after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away by the flood.** <sup>16</sup>**But the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened its mouth and swallowed up the flood which the dragon had spewed out of his mouth.** <sup>17</sup>**And the dragon was enraged with the woman, and he went to make war with the rest of her offspring, who keep the commandments of God and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.**

### Chapter 13

<sup>1</sup>Then I stood on the sand of the sea. And I saw a beast rising up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and on his horns ten crowns, and on his heads a blasphemous name. <sup>2</sup>Now the beast which I saw was like a leopard, his feet were like *the feet of* a bear, and his mouth like the mouth of a lion. The dragon gave him his power, his throne, and great authority. <sup>3</sup>And *I saw* one of his heads as if it had been mortally wounded, and his deadly wound was healed. And all the world marveled and followed the beast. <sup>4</sup>So they worshiped the dragon who gave authority to the beast; and they worshiped the beast, saying, "Who *is* like the beast? Who is able to make war with him?" <sup>5</sup>**And he was given a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies, and he was given authority to continue for forty-two months.** <sup>6</sup>**Then he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme His name, His tabernacle, and those who dwell in heaven.** <sup>7</sup>**It was granted to him to make war with the saints and to overcome them. And authority was given him over every tribe, tongue, and nation.** <sup>8</sup>**All who dwell on the earth will worship him, whose names have not been written in the Book of Life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.** <sup>9</sup>**If anyone has an ear, let him hear.** <sup>10</sup>**He who leads into captivity shall go into captivity; he who kills with the sword must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.**

<sup>11</sup>Then I saw another beast coming up out of the earth, and he had two horns like a lamb and spoke like a dragon. <sup>12</sup>And he exercises all the authority of the first beast in his presence, and causes the earth and those who dwell in it to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. <sup>13</sup>He performs great signs, so that he even makes fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men. <sup>14</sup>And he deceives those who dwell on the earth by those signs which he was granted to do in the sight of the beast, telling those who dwell on the earth to make an image to the beast who was wounded by the

sword and lived. <sup>15</sup>He was granted *power* to give breath to the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak and cause as many as would not worship the image of the beast to be killed. <sup>16</sup>**He causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on their right hand or on their foreheads,** <sup>17</sup>**and that no one may buy or sell except one who has the mark or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.** <sup>18</sup>**Here is wisdom. Let him who has understanding calculate the number of the beast, for it is the number of a man: His number is 666.**

## Chapter 14

<sup>1</sup>Then I looked, and behold, a Lamb standing on Mount Zion, and with Him one hundred *and* forty-four thousand, having His Father's name written on their foreheads. <sup>2</sup>And I heard a voice from heaven, like the voice of many waters, and like the voice of loud thunder. And I heard the sound of harpists playing their harps. <sup>3</sup>They sang as it were a new song before the throne, before the four living creatures, and the elders; and no one could learn that song except the hundred *and* forty-four thousand who were redeemed from the earth. <sup>4</sup>These are the ones who were not defiled with women, for they are virgins. These are the ones who follow the Lamb wherever He goes. These were redeemed from *among* men, *being* firstfruits to God and to the Lamb. <sup>5</sup>And in their mouth was found no deceit, for they are without fault before the throne of God.

<sup>6</sup>Then I saw another angel flying in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach to those who dwell on the earth—to every nation, tribe, tongue, and people—<sup>7</sup>saying with a loud voice, “Fear God and give glory to Him, for the hour of His judgment has come; and worship Him who made heaven and earth, the sea and springs of water.” <sup>8</sup>And another angel followed, saying, “Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she has made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.” <sup>9</sup>Then a third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, “If anyone worships the beast and his image, and receives *his* mark on his forehead or on his hand, <sup>10</sup>“he himself shall also drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out full strength into the cup of His indignation. He shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb. <sup>11</sup>“And the smoke of their torment ascends forever and ever; and they have no rest day or night, who worship the beast and his image, and whoever receives the mark of his name.” <sup>12</sup>**Here is the patience of the saints; here *are* those who keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus.** <sup>13</sup>Then I heard a voice from heaven saying to me, “Write: ‘Blessed *are* the dead who die in the Lord from now on.’ ” “Yes,” says the Spirit, “that they may rest from their labors, and their works follow them.”<sup>230</sup>

*So we see in these scriptures that the saints in the Christian church worldwide will be refined during the three and one half years of the great tribulation. Those who have prepared themselves and purified themselves voluntarily BEFORE the great tribulation will escape that time of trouble. These people are represented by the 144,000 or the 'Philadelphia church'. Through less troublesome voluntarily sufferings, they will have*

*learned to repent, humbly submit themselves to God and walk in the perfect love of God's love through Jesus Christ. They will have been 'broken' on the stone of Jesus, rather than those who go through part or all of the great tribulation who will be 'ground into powder'. Either way, God will have His way with His people in order to teach them to OVERCOME; then and only then will Jesus come back. Those who walk in pride and reject God's truth through Jesus and His ways that produce fruitful good works will miss out on the kingdom of Heaven. Jesus will only come back when the bride, (the church) has prepared herself through these sufferings. It is through suffering that we learn obedience to God. Even Jesus became perfected and obedient through His sufferings, (see the teaching, 'SUFFERING - The Key to Obedience', II Corinthians 11:2, Hebrews 2:10, 5:8 above, Matthew 21:28-46, Luke 20:9-19 and Revelation 19:1-10).*

### **Matthew 21:43-44 -**

<sup>28</sup>“But what do you think? A man had two sons, and he came to the first and said, ‘Son, go, work today in my vineyard.’ <sup>29</sup>“He answered and said, ‘I will not,’ but afterward he regretted it and went. <sup>30</sup>“Then he came to the second and said likewise. And he answered and said, ‘I go, sir,’ but he did not go. <sup>31</sup>“Which of the two did the will of *his* father?” They said to Him, “The first.” Jesus said to them, “Assuredly, I say to you that tax collectors and harlots enter the kingdom of God before you. <sup>32</sup>“For John came to you in the way of righteousness, and you did not believe him; but tax collectors and harlots believed him; and when you saw *it*, you did not afterward relent and believe him.

<sup>33</sup>“Hear another parable: There was a certain landowner who planted a vineyard and set a hedge around it, dug a winepress in it and built a tower. And he leased it to vinedressers and went into a far country. <sup>34</sup>“Now when vintage-time drew near, he sent his servants to the vinedressers, that they might receive its fruit. <sup>35</sup>“And the vinedressers took his servants, beat one, killed one, and stoned another. <sup>36</sup>“Again he sent other servants, more than the first, and they did likewise to them. <sup>37</sup>“Then last of all he sent his son to them, saying, ‘They will respect my son.’ <sup>38</sup>“But when the vinedressers saw the son, they said among themselves, ‘This is the heir. Come, let us kill him and seize his inheritance.’ <sup>39</sup>“So they took him and cast *him* out of the vineyard and killed *him*. <sup>40</sup>“Therefore, when the owner of the vineyard comes, what will he do to those vinedressers?” <sup>41</sup>They said to Him, “He will destroy those wicked men miserably, and lease *his* vineyard to other vinedressers who will render to him the fruits in their seasons.” <sup>42</sup>Jesus said to them, “Have you never read in the Scriptures:

‘The stone which the builders rejected  
Has become the chief cornerstone.  
This was the LORD’s doing,  
And it is marvelous in our eyes’?

<sup>43</sup>“Therefore I say to you, the kingdom of God will be taken from you and given to a nation bearing the fruits of it. <sup>44</sup>“**And whoever falls on this stone will be broken; but on whomever it falls, it will grind him to powder.**” <sup>45</sup>Now when the chief priests and Pharisees heard His parables, they perceived that He was speaking of them. <sup>46</sup>But when

they sought to lay hands on Him, they feared the multitudes, because they took Him for a prophet.<sup>231</sup>

### Luke 20:9-19 -

<sup>9</sup>Then He began to tell the people this parable: “A certain man planted a vineyard, leased it to vinedressers, and went into a far country for a long time. <sup>10</sup>“Now at vintage-time he sent a servant to the vinedressers, that they might give him some of the fruit of the vineyard. But the vinedressers beat him and sent *him* away empty-handed. <sup>11</sup>“Again he sent another servant; and they beat him also, treated *him* shamefully, and sent *him* away empty-handed. <sup>12</sup>“And again he sent a third; and they wounded him also and cast *him* out. <sup>13</sup>“Then the owner of the vineyard said, ‘What shall I do? I will send my beloved son. Probably they will respect *him* when they see him.’ <sup>14</sup>“But when the vinedressers saw him, they reasoned among themselves, saying, ‘This is the heir. Come, let us kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.’ <sup>15</sup>“So they cast him out of the vineyard and killed *him*. Therefore what will the owner of the vineyard do to them? <sup>16</sup>“He will come and destroy those vinedressers and give the vineyard to others.” And when they heard *it* they said, “Certainly not!” <sup>17</sup>Then He looked at them and said, “What then is this that is written:

‘The stone which the builders rejected  
Has become the chief cornerstone’?

<sup>18</sup>“Whoever falls on that stone will be broken; but on whomever it falls, it will grind him to powder.” <sup>19</sup>And the chief priests and the scribes that very hour sought to lay hands on Him, but they feared the people—for they knew He had spoken this parable against them.<sup>232</sup>

### Revelation 19:1-10 -

<sup>1</sup>**After these things** I heard a loud voice of a great multitude in heaven, saying, “Alleluia! Salvation and glory and honor and power *belong* to the Lord our God! <sup>2</sup>“For true and righteous *are* His judgments, because He has judged the great harlot who corrupted the earth with her fornication; and He has avenged on her the blood of His servants *shed* by her.” <sup>3</sup>Again they said, “Alleluia! Her smoke rises up forever and ever!” <sup>4</sup>And the twenty-four elders and the four living creatures fell down and worshiped God who sat on the throne, saying, “Amen! Alleluia!” <sup>5</sup>Then a voice came from the throne, saying, “Praise our God, all you His servants and those who fear Him, both small and great!” <sup>6</sup>And I heard, as it were, the voice of a great multitude, as the sound of many waters and as the sound of mighty thunderings, saying, “Alleluia! For the Lord God Omnipotent reigns! <sup>7</sup>“**Let us be glad and rejoice and give Him glory, for the marriage of the Lamb has come, and His wife has made herself ready.**” <sup>8</sup>And to her it was granted to be arrayed in fine linen, clean and bright, for the fine linen is the righteous acts of the

---

<sup>231</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>232</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

saints. <sup>9</sup>Then he said to me, “Write: ‘Blessed *are* those who are called to the marriage supper of the Lamb!’ ” And he said to me, “These are the true sayings of God.” <sup>10</sup>And I fell at his feet to worship him. But he said to me, “See *that you do not do that!* I am your fellow servant, and of your brethren who have the testimony of Jesus. Worship God! For the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.”<sup>233</sup>

*Without the wisdom, understanding and revelatory knowledge that comes from God, one cannot understand these things and will likely reject them. Those who are not rebellious against the truths of God will have ‘eyes to see’ and ‘ears to hear’. They will see and hear these things, agree with them and walk in them, (see Matthew 13:43 and John 12:40 above and Ezekiel 12:1-2).*

### Ezekiel 12:1-2 -

<sup>1</sup>Now the word of the LORD came to me, saying: <sup>2</sup>“**Son of man, you dwell in the midst of a rebellious house, which has eyes to see but does not see, and ears to hear but does not hear; for they *are* a rebellious house.**”<sup>234</sup>

*It will be those people who will comprise the perfected ‘Philadelphia church’ and will be able to skip out on the ‘final exam’ for God’s people that will be administered through the Antichrist during the forty two months of the great tribulation. These 144,000 perfected men of God and their families will be taken out of harm’s way somewhere on earth that is referred to in Revelation 12:6 and 14 above as the ‘wilderness’. The hidden concept of the wilderness is also found in some scriptures when the Bible speaks of ‘Zion’. Zion can mean wilderness. This is seen when one looks at Strong’s Hebrew words numbers 6723-6726 that are translated as Zion in the Bible...*

6723. יָדָה

**tsîyâh**, *tsee-yaw*’; from an unused root mean. to *parch*; *aridity*; concr. a *desert*:—barren, drought, dry (land, place), solitary place, **wilderness**.

6724. יָדָה

**tsîyôwn**, *tsee-yone*’; from the same as 6723; a *desert*:—dry place.

6725. יָדָה

**tsîyûwn**, *tsee-yoon*’; from the same as 6723 in the sense of *conspicuousness* [comp. 5329]; a monumental or guiding *pillar*:—sign, title, waymark.

6726. יָדָה

---

<sup>233</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>234</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

**Tsîyôwn**, *tsee-yone*'; the same (reg.) as 6725; *Tsijon* (as a permanent *capital*), a mountain of Jerusalem:— **Zion**.235

*Therefore when the scriptures refer to Zion, they may be speaking of the wilderness and the true church who escape the great tribulation. This is a hidden truth that is only obtained through the revelatory knowledge of God. The word Zion has this meaning especially throughout the books of the prophets when they speak of the wilderness and those of Zion who have escaped. It is referring initially to the 'Philadelphia church', or the perfected Christians who have received these truths and learned to truly abide in Jesus through the life in Christ. During the great tribulation, there will be MULTITUDES of other Christians who will 'come through' the great tribulation and escape some of it. Many others will be killed or put in prison. These people who escape the great tribulation will also understand the order and the symbolism of the mathematics of God. They will 'see' and accept even the seemingly strange things that God has put into His plan for mankind. One of these strange things is the concept of polygamy, (or really polygyny) in which one true Christian man will have more than one true Christian wife. In fact the number EIGHT is the number of NEW things or new beginnings. It represents the work of the seven Spirits of God through Jesus in the earth. One Jesus plus seven Spirits of God equals eight, which is the number of the New Covenant through the cross of Christ. Also, the number four represents the earth, because there are four points on the compass, four 'corners' of the earth, the four winds of the earth, etc. The number two represents God's work in the earth through Jesus and the Holy Spirit and through the Holy Spirit and the church. This is why everything in the earth must be established out of the mouths of at least two witnesses. Two times four equals eight and represents the New Testament/Covenant and 'new thing' that God is going to do in the earth. It also represents the eight thousand year plan of God for man in the earth, (which is explained in other writings and will not be discussed here). The number eight represents the 'new thing' that God is going to do and is indeed already doing in the earth and will be represented by one righteous Christian man having seven righteous Christian wives. Therefore the 144,000 men who escape into the wilderness will likely be accompanied by at least seven times this number of wives plus children. This is why the concept of Christian polygyny is taking a foothold in the earth even now. It is for the fulfillment of the prophecies as foretold especially by Isaiah. This is also why the enemy is fighting so hard against Christian polygyny, as it signals the fact that his demise is near. **Those who reject the concept of Christian polygyny are rejecting the plan of God for mankind and in effect rejecting Christ. Those who reject Christian polygyny are operating under the direction of the antichrist spirit and are resisting the return of Christ. Only those who truly want to obey God and submit to Him and His plan for them and humans in general will openly accept and participate in Christian polygyny. When this comes to pass, then Jesus can come back. He will not come back before these scriptures are fulfilled. Those who refuse to accept this concept and walk in it will have it forced on them by the upcoming World War III or great tribulation, (see the book Who Said That You Should be***

---

235James Strong, *New Strong's dictionary of Hebrew and Greek words [computer file]*, electronic ed., Logos Library System, (Nashville: Thomas Nelson) 1997, c1996.

*Perfect?, Isaiah chapter 4, 43:14-21, Revelation 3:1, 4:5, 5:6 and the Apocrypha of the Old Testament - II Esdras 16:18-78).*

## Isaiah Chapter 4 -

### Chapter 4

<sup>1</sup> **And in that day seven women shall take hold of one man, saying,  
“We will eat our own food and wear our own apparel;  
Only let us be called by your name,  
To take away our reproach.”**

<sup>2</sup> In that day the Branch of the LORD shall be beautiful and glorious;  
And the fruit of the earth *shall be* excellent and appealing  
For those of Israel who have escaped.

<sup>3</sup>And it shall come to pass that *he who is* left in Zion and remains in Jerusalem will be called holy—everyone who is recorded among the living in Jerusalem. <sup>4</sup>When the Lord has washed away the filth of the daughters of Zion, and purged the blood of Jerusalem from her midst, by the spirit of judgment and by the spirit of burning, <sup>5</sup>then the LORD will create above every dwelling place of Mount Zion, and above her assemblies, a cloud and smoke by day and the shining of a flaming fire by night. For over all the glory there *will be* a covering. <sup>6</sup>And there will be a tabernacle for shade in the daytime from the heat, for a place of refuge, and for a shelter from storm and rain.<sup>236</sup>

**Verse 1 in the NLT says this -**

**4** In that day few men will be left alive. **Seven women will fight over each of them and say, “Let us all marry you! We will provide our own food and clothing. Only let us be called by your name so we won’t be mocked as old maids.”**<sup>237</sup>

**Isaiah 43:14-21 -**

<sup>14</sup>The LORD your Redeemer, the Holy One of Israel, says: “For your sakes I will send an invading army against Babylon. And the Babylonians will be forced to flee in those ships they are so proud of. <sup>15</sup>I am the LORD, your Holy One, Israel’s Creator and King. <sup>16</sup>I am the LORD, who opened a way through the waters, making a dry path through the sea. <sup>17</sup>I called forth the mighty army of Egypt with all its chariots and horses. I drew them beneath the waves, and they drowned, their lives snuffed out like a smoldering candlewick.

<sup>18</sup>**“But forget all that—it is nothing compared to what I am going to do. <sup>19</sup>For I am about to do a brand-new thing. See, I have already begun! Do you not see it? I**

---

<sup>236</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>237</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.



will make a pathway through the wilderness for my people to come home. I will create rivers for them in the desert!<sup>20</sup> The wild animals in the fields will thank me, the jackals and ostriches, too, for giving them water in the wilderness. Yes, I will make springs in the desert, so that my chosen people can be refreshed.<sup>21</sup> I have made Israel for myself, and they will someday honor me before the whole world.<sup>238</sup>

#### Revelation 3:1 -

<sup>1</sup>“And to the angel of the church in Sardis write,  
‘These things says He who has the **seven Spirits of God** and the seven stars: “I know your works, that you have a name that you are alive, but you are dead.”<sup>239</sup>

#### Revelation 4:5 -

<sup>5</sup>And from the throne proceeded lightnings, thunderings, and voices. Seven lamps of fire were burning before the throne, which are **the seven Spirits of God**.<sup>240</sup>

#### Revelation 5:6 -

<sup>6</sup>And I looked, and behold, in the midst of the throne and of the four living creatures, and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb as though it had been slain, having seven horns and seven eyes, which are **the seven Spirits of God** sent out into all the earth. <sup>241</sup>

#### II Esdras 16:18-78 -

##### *The Horror of the Last Days*

<sup>18</sup> The beginning of sorrows, when there shall be much lamentation; the beginning of famine, when many shall perish; the beginning of wars, when the powers shall be terrified; the beginning of calamities, when all shall tremble. What shall they do, when the calamities come? <sup>19</sup> Famine and plague, tribulation and anguish are sent as scourges for the correction of humankind. <sup>20</sup> Yet for all this they will not turn from their iniquities, or ever be mindful of the scourges. <sup>21</sup> Indeed, provisions will be so cheap upon earth that people will imagine that peace is assured for them, and then calamities shall spring up on the earth—the sword, famine, and great confusion. <sup>22</sup> For many of those who live on the earth shall perish by famine; and those who survive the famine shall die by the sword. <sup>23</sup> And the dead shall be thrown out like dung, and there shall be no one to console them; for the earth shall

---

<sup>238</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>239</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>240</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>241</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

be left desolate, and its cities shall be demolished. <sup>24</sup> No one shall be left to cultivate the earth or to sow it. <sup>25</sup> The trees shall bear fruit, but who will gather it? <sup>26</sup> The grapes shall ripen, but who will tread them? For in all places there shall be great solitude; <sup>27</sup> a person will long to see another human being, or even to hear a human voice. <sup>28</sup> For ten shall be left out of a city; and two, out of the field, those who have hidden themselves in thick groves and clefts in the rocks. <sup>29</sup> Just as in an olive orchard three or four olives may be left on every tree, <sup>30</sup> or just as, when a vineyard is gathered, some clusters may be left by those who search carefully through the vineyard, <sup>31</sup> so in those days three or four shall be left by those who search their houses with the sword. <sup>32</sup> The earth shall be left desolate, and its fields shall be plowed up, and its roads and all its paths shall bring forth thorns, because no sheep will go along them. <sup>33</sup> Virgins shall mourn because they have no bridegrooms; women shall mourn because they have no husbands; their daughters shall mourn, because they have no help. <sup>34</sup> Their bridegrooms shall be killed in war, and their husbands shall perish of famine.

#### *God's People Must Prepare for the End*

<sup>35</sup> Listen now to these things, and understand them, you who are servants of the Lord. <sup>36</sup> This is the word of the Lord; receive it and do not disbelieve what the Lord says. <sup>37</sup> The calamities draw near, and are not delayed. <sup>38</sup> Just as a pregnant woman, in the ninth month when the time of her delivery draws near, has great pains around her womb for two or three hours beforehand, but when the child comes forth from the womb, there will not be a moment's delay, <sup>39</sup> so the calamities will not delay in coming upon the earth, and the world will groan, and pains will seize it on every side.

<sup>40</sup> Hear my words, O my people; prepare for battle, and in the midst of the calamities be like strangers on the earth. <sup>41</sup> Let the one who sells be like one who will flee; let the one who buys be like one who will lose; <sup>42</sup> let the one who does business be like one who will not make a profit; and let the one who builds a house be like one who will not live in it; <sup>43</sup> let the one who sows be like one who will not reap; so also the one who prunes the vines, like one who will not gather the grapes; <sup>44</sup> those who marry, like those who will have no children; and those who do not marry, like those who are widowed. <sup>45</sup> Because of this, those who labor, labor in vain; <sup>46</sup> for strangers shall gather their fruits, and plunder their goods, overthrow their houses, and take their children captive; for in captivity and famine they will produce their children. <sup>47</sup> Those who conduct business, do so only to have it plundered; the more they adorn their cities, their houses and possessions, and their persons, <sup>48</sup> the more angry I will be with them for their sins, says the Lord. <sup>49</sup> Just as a respectable and virtuous woman abhors a prostitute, <sup>50</sup> so righteousness shall abhor iniquity, when she decks herself out, and shall accuse her to her face when he comes who will defend the one who searches out every sin on earth.

#### *The Power and Wisdom of God*

<sup>51</sup> Therefore do not be like her or her works. <sup>52</sup> For in a very short time iniquity will be removed from the earth, and righteousness will reign over us. <sup>53</sup> Sinners must not say that they have not sinned; for God will burn coals of fire on the head of everyone who says, "I have not sinned before God and his glory." <sup>54</sup> The Lord certainly knows everything that people do; he knows their imaginations and their thoughts and their hearts. <sup>55</sup> He said, "Let the earth be made," and it was made, and "Let the heaven be made," and it was

made.<sup>56</sup> At his word the stars were fixed in their places, and he knows the number of the stars.<sup>57</sup> He searches the abyss and its treasures; he has measured the sea and its contents;<sup>58</sup> he has confined the sea in the midst of the waters; and by his word he has suspended the earth over the water.<sup>59</sup> He has spread out the heaven like a dome and made it secure upon the waters;<sup>60</sup> he has put springs of water in the desert, and pools on the tops of the mountains, so as to send rivers from the heights to water the earth.<sup>61</sup> He formed human beings and put a heart in the midst of each body, and gave each person breath and life and understanding<sup>62</sup> and the spirit of Almighty God, who surely made all things and searches out hidden things in hidden places.<sup>63</sup> He knows your imaginations and what you think in your hearts! Woe to those who sin and want to hide their sins!<sup>64</sup> The Lord will strictly examine all their works, and will make a public spectacle of all of you.<sup>65</sup> You shall be put to shame when your sins come out before others, and your own iniquities shall stand as your accusers on that day.<sup>66</sup> What will you do? Or how will you hide your sins before the Lord and his glory?<sup>67</sup> Indeed, God is the judge; fear him! Cease from your sins, and forget your iniquities, never to commit them again; so God will lead you forth and deliver you from all tribulation.

### ***Impending Persecution of God's People***

**<sup>68</sup> The burning wrath of a great multitude is kindled over you; they shall drag some of you away and force you to eat what was sacrificed to idols. <sup>69</sup> And those who consent to eat shall be held in derision and contempt, and shall be trampled under foot. <sup>70</sup> For in many places and in neighboring cities there shall be a great uprising against those who fear the Lord. <sup>71</sup> They shall be like maniacs, sparing no one, but plundering and destroying those who continue to fear the Lord. <sup>72</sup> For they shall destroy and plunder their goods, and drive them out of house and home. <sup>73</sup> Then the tested quality of my elect shall be manifest, like gold that is tested by fire.**

### ***Promise of Divine Deliverance***

**<sup>74</sup> Listen, my elect ones, says the Lord; the days of tribulation are at hand, but I will deliver you from them. <sup>75</sup> Do not fear or doubt, for God is your guide. <sup>76</sup> You who keep my commandments and precepts, says the Lord God, must not let your sins weigh you down, or your iniquities prevail over you. <sup>77</sup> Woe to those who are choked by their sins and overwhelmed by their iniquities! They are like a field choked with underbrush and its path overwhelmed with thorns, so that no one can pass through. <sup>78</sup> It is shut off and given up to be consumed by fire.**<sup>242</sup>

*In summary, the order of the end-time events is as follows:*

- 1) *The **beginning of sorrows**, (this started a few years ago) - Matthew 24:5-8 above and Revelation 6:1-8*
- 2) *A time of **tribulation** in which Christians will be persecuted and the world's economy will fail, (this time started in June, 2006) - Matthew 24:9-13 above and Revelation 6:9-11*

- 3) *The **great tribulation**, (coming soon - this will last 3 ½ years and will begin when Jerusalem is surrounded by armies and the 'abomination of desolation' is set up on Mount Moriah and the Antichrist declares himself to be god - this is the 'day of the devil' - only the true Christians will escape in 'Zion' to a place of safety in the wilderness) - Matthew 24:15-28 above, the 'final phase' of the fifth seal in Revelation 6:9-11 and 12:13-17 (above)*
- 4) *The **Day of the Lord**, (this is the judgment of God on the earth and will last an indeterminate period of time, possibly another 3 ½ years) - Isaiah 13:6-22, 34:8-10, Jeremiah 46:10, Ezekiel 30:1-4, the book of Joel, Amos 5:18-20, Obadiah 15-18, the book of Zephaniah, Zechariah 14:1-3, Vv. 10-15, Malachi 4:5-6, Revelation 6:12-17, chapters 8-9 and chapters 15-16*
- 5) *The **return of Christ and the first resurrection** of the saints in Christ followed by the **millennial reign of Christ and the saints** for 1,000 years, Zechariah 14:4-9 and Vv. 16-21 and Revelation 19:1-20:10*
- 6) ***Judgment Day**, (the 'great white throne judgment') the new heavens, new earth along with the **New Jerusalem** and the beginning of the rest of eternity when God will live with His people forever and everything not of God will be destroyed in the lake of fire, Revelation 20:11- chapters 21-22, (see Revelation 20:11 - chapter 21 above)*

*These things are 'hidden' from the majority of the Christian church today, as it is in the plan of God to have only a few people around the world receive these things, so that they will become a kind of 'firstfruits' sacrifice to Him. These 'firstfruits' people, (i.e., the 'Philadelphia church' or the 144,000) will BY CHOICE sacrifice their lives to Christ and begin to truly abide or live IN HIM. In this way they will become 'perfected' or mature in Christ BEFORE the great tribulation. Again, we call this place of perfection the 'life in Christ'. All others who reject these truths and refuse to be 'broken on the stone' which is Jesus, will have the stone fall on them and 'grind them into powder'. This latter, stubbornly rebellious group of Christians will go through some or all of the great tribulation. During the three and one half years of the great tribulation many Christians will die and many will be put into prison for their beliefs. Anyone who receives the 'mark of the beast', (which will be an implantable computer chip having all their personal and banking information contained on it) will by definition end up in the lake of fire. Therefore, any true Christian will refuse the mark of the beast and will as a result then be unable to buy or sell anything during the great tribulation. This will lock them in to either starving or perfecting themselves in Christ so that God will lead them into the wilderness to the 'place of safety'. During this time of great tribulation, Christian polygyny will be FORCED on rebellious Christians who refuse to accept it willingly. Though this sounds strange and extreme, it is the truth as revealed by the Holy Spirit of God and WILL come to pass whether people believe it or not. Only those who OVERCOME and ENDURE to the end will be saved and enter the kingdom of God.*

## **Revelation Chapter 6 -**

### **Chapter 6**

<sup>1</sup>Now I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals; and I heard one of the four living creatures saying with a voice like thunder, "Come and see." <sup>2</sup>And I looked, and behold, a white horse. He who sat on it had a bow; and a crown was given to him, and he went out conquering and to conquer.

<sup>3</sup>When He opened the second seal, I heard the second living creature saying, "Come and see." <sup>4</sup>Another horse, fiery red, went out. And it was granted to the one who sat on it to take peace from the earth, and that *people* should kill one another; and there was given to him a great sword.

<sup>5</sup>When He opened the third seal, I heard the third living creature say, "Come and see." So I looked, and behold, a black horse, and he who sat on it had a pair of scales in his hand. <sup>6</sup>And I heard a voice in the midst of the four living creatures saying, "A quart of wheat for a denarius, and three quarts of barley for a denarius; and do not harm the oil and the wine."

<sup>7</sup>When He opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth living creature saying, "Come and see." <sup>8</sup>So I looked, and behold, a pale horse. And the name of him who sat on it was Death, and Hades followed with him. And power was given to them over a fourth of the earth, to kill with sword, with hunger, with death, and by the beasts of the earth.

<sup>9</sup>When He opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of those who had been slain for the word of God and for the testimony which they held. <sup>10</sup>And they cried with a loud voice, saying, "How long, O Lord, holy and true, until You judge and avenge our blood on those who dwell on the earth?" <sup>11</sup>Then a white robe was given to each of them; and it was said to them that they should rest a little while longer, until both *the number of* their fellow servants and their brethren, who would be killed as they *were*, was completed.

<sup>12</sup>**I looked when He opened the sixth seal, and behold, there was a great earthquake; and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became like blood. <sup>13</sup>And the stars of heaven fell to the earth, as a fig tree drops its late figs when it is shaken by a mighty wind. <sup>14</sup>Then the sky receded as a scroll when it is rolled up, and every mountain and island was moved out of its place. <sup>15</sup>And the kings of the earth, the great men, the rich men, the commanders, the mighty men, every slave and every free man, hid themselves in the caves and in the rocks of the mountains, <sup>16</sup>and said to the mountains and rocks, "Fall on us and hide us from the face of Him who sits on the throne and from the wrath of the Lamb! <sup>17</sup>"For the great day of His wrath has come, and who is able to stand?"**243

Isaiah 13:6-22 -

<sup>6</sup>           **Wail, for the day of the LORD is at hand!**  
**It will come as destruction from the Almighty.**  
<sup>7</sup>           **Therefore all hands will be limp,**  
**Every man's heart will melt,**  
<sup>8</sup>           **And they will be afraid.**

---

243 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

**Pangs and sorrows will take hold of *them*;  
They will be in pain as a woman in childbirth;  
They will be amazed at one another;  
Their faces *will be like flames*.**

- 9        **Behold, the day of the LORD comes,  
Cruel, with both wrath and fierce anger,  
To lay the land desolate;  
And He will destroy its sinners from it.**
- 10       **For the stars of heaven and their constellations  
Will not give their light;  
The sun will be darkened in its going forth,  
And the moon will not cause its light to shine.**
- 11       **“I will punish the world for *its* evil,  
And the wicked for their iniquity;  
I will halt the arrogance of the proud,  
And will lay low the haughtiness of the terrible.**
- 12       **I will make a mortal more rare than fine gold,  
A man more than the golden wedge of Ophir.**
- 13       **Therefore I will shake the heavens,  
And the earth will move out of her place,  
In the wrath of the LORD of hosts  
And in the day of His fierce anger.**
- 14       It shall be as the hunted gazelle,  
And as a sheep that no man takes up;  
Every man will turn to his own people,  
And everyone will flee to his own land.
- 15       Everyone who is found will be thrust through,  
And everyone who is captured will fall by the sword.
- 16       Their children also will be dashed to pieces before their eyes;  
Their houses will be plundered  
And their wives ravished.
- 17       “Behold, I will stir up the Medes against them,  
Who will not regard silver;  
And *as for* gold, they will not delight in it.
- 18       Also *their* bows will dash the young men to pieces,  
And they will have no pity on the fruit of the womb;  
Their eye will not spare children.
- 19       And Babylon, the glory of kingdoms,  
The beauty of the Chaldeans’ pride,  
Will be as when God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah.
- 20       It will never be inhabited,  
Nor will it be settled from generation to generation;  
Nor will the Arabian pitch tents there,  
Nor will the shepherds make their sheepfolds there.
- 21       But wild beasts of the desert will lie there,  
And their houses will be full of owls;

Ostriches will dwell there,  
 And wild goats will caper there.  
 22 The hyenas will howl in their citadels,  
 And jackals in their pleasant palaces.  
 Her time *is* near to come,  
 And her days will not be prolonged.”<sup>244</sup>

**Isaiah 34:8-10 -**

8 **For *it is* the day of the LORD’s vengeance,**  
**The year of recompense for the cause of Zion.**  
 9 **Its streams shall be turned into pitch,**  
**And its dust into brimstone;**  
**Its land shall become burning pitch.**  
 10 **It shall not be quenched night or day;**  
**Its smoke shall ascend forever.**  
 From generation to generation it shall lie waste;  
 No one shall pass through it forever and ever.<sup>245</sup>

**Jeremiah 46:10 -**

10 **For this *is* the day of the Lord GOD of hosts,**  
**A day of vengeance,**  
 That He may avenge Himself on His adversaries.  
 The sword shall devour;  
 It shall be satiated and made drunk with their blood;  
 For the Lord GOD of hosts has a sacrifice  
 In the north country by the River Euphrates.<sup>246</sup>

**Ezekiel 30:1-4 -**

<sup>1</sup>The word of the LORD came to me again, saying, <sup>2</sup>“Son of man, prophesy and say,  
 ‘Thus says the Lord GOD:

“Wail, ‘Woe to the day!’

---

<sup>244</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>245</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>246</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

3           **For the day *is* near,**  
          **Even the day of the LORD *is* near;**  
          **It will be a day of clouds, the time of the Gentiles.**  
4           The sword shall come upon Egypt,  
          And great anguish shall be in Ethiopia,  
          When the slain fall in Egypt,  
          And they take away her wealth,  
And her foundations are broken down.<sup>247</sup>

## Joel Chapters 1-3 -

### Chapter 1

<sup>1</sup>The word of the LORD that came to Joel the son of Pethuel.

2           Hear this, you elders,  
          And give ear, all you inhabitants of the land!  
          Has *anything like* this happened in your days,  
          Or even in the days of your fathers?

3           Tell your children about it,  
          *Let* your children *tell* their children,  
          And their children another generation.

4           What the chewing locust left, the swarming locust has eaten;  
          What the swarming locust left, the crawling locust has eaten;  
          And what the crawling locust left, the consuming locust has eaten.

5           Awake, you drunkards, and weep;  
          And wail, all you drinkers of wine,  
          Because of the new wine,  
          For it has been cut off from your mouth.

6           For a nation has come up against My land,  
          Strong, and without number;  
          His teeth *are* the teeth of a lion,  
          And he has the fangs of a fierce lion.

7           He has laid waste My vine,  
          And ruined My fig tree;  
          He has stripped it bare and thrown *it* away;  
          Its branches are made white.

8           Lament like a virgin girded with sackcloth  
          For the husband of her youth.

9           The grain offering and the drink offering  
          Have been cut off from the house of the LORD;  
          The priests mourn, who minister to the LORD.

---

<sup>247</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.



10       The field is wasted,  
The land mourns;  
For the grain is ruined,  
The new wine is dried up,  
The oil fails.

11       Be ashamed, you farmers,  
Wail, you vinedressers,  
For the wheat and the barley;  
Because the harvest of the field has perished.

12       The vine has dried up,  
And the fig tree has withered;  
The pomegranate tree,  
The palm tree also,  
And the apple tree—  
All the trees of the field are withered;  
Surely joy has withered away from the sons of men.

13       Gird yourselves and lament, you priests;  
Wail, you who minister before the altar;  
Come, lie all night in sackcloth,  
You who minister to my God;  
For the grain offering and the drink offering  
Are withheld from the house of your God.

14       Consecrate a fast,  
Call a sacred assembly;  
Gather the elders  
*And* all the inhabitants of the land  
*Into* the house of the LORD your God,  
And cry out to the LORD.

15       **Alas for the day!**  
**For the day of the LORD is at hand;**  
**It shall come as destruction from the Almighty.**

16       Is not the food cut off before our eyes,  
Joy and gladness from the house of our God?

17       The seed shrivels under the clods,  
Storehouses are in shambles;  
Barns are broken down,  
For the grain has withered.

18       How the animals groan!  
The herds of cattle are restless,  
Because they have no pasture;  
Even the flocks of sheep suffer punishment.

19       O LORD, to You I cry out;  
For fire has devoured the open pastures,  
And a flame has burned all the trees of the field.

20       The beasts of the field also cry out to You,  
For the water brooks are dried up,

And fire has devoured the open pastures.

## Chapter 2

- 1        **Blow the trumpet in Zion,  
And sound an alarm in My holy mountain!  
Let all the inhabitants of the land tremble;  
For the day of the LORD is coming,  
For it is at hand:**
- 2        **A day of darkness and gloominess,  
A day of clouds and thick darkness,  
Like the morning *clouds* spread over the mountains.  
A people *come*, great and strong,  
The like of whom has never been;  
Nor will there ever be any *such* after them,  
Even for many successive generations.**
- 3        **A fire devours before them,  
And behind them a flame burns;  
The land *is* like the Garden of Eden before them,  
And behind them a desolate wilderness;  
Surely nothing shall escape them.**
- 4        **Their appearance is like the appearance of horses;  
And like swift steeds, so they run.**
- 5        **With a noise like chariots  
Over mountaintops they leap,  
Like the noise of a flaming fire that devours the stubble,  
Like a strong people set in battle array.**
- 6        **Before them the people writhe in pain;  
All faces are drained of color.**
- 7        **They run like mighty men,  
They climb the wall like men of war;  
Every one marches in formation,  
And they do not break ranks.**
- 8        **They do not push one another;  
Every one marches in his own column.  
Though they lunge between the weapons,  
They are not cut down.**
- 9        **They run to and fro in the city,  
They run on the wall;  
They climb into the houses,  
They enter at the windows like a thief.**
- 10       **The earth quakes before them,  
The heavens tremble;  
The sun and moon grow dark,  
And the stars diminish their brightness.**
- 11       **The LORD gives voice before His army,**

**For His camp is very great;  
For strong *is the One* who executes His word.  
For the day of the LORD *is* great and very terrible;  
Who can endure it?**

12        **“Now, therefore,” says the LORD,  
“Turn to Me with all your heart,  
With fasting, with weeping, and with mourning.”**

13        **So rend your heart, and not your garments;  
Return to the LORD your God,  
For He *is* gracious and merciful,  
Slow to anger, and of great kindness;  
And He relents from doing harm.**

14        **Who knows *if* He will turn and relent,  
And leave a blessing behind Him—  
A grain offering and a drink offering  
For the LORD your God?**

15        Blow the trumpet in Zion,  
Consecrate a fast,  
Call a sacred assembly;  
16        Gather the people,  
Sanctify the congregation,  
Assemble the elders,  
Gather the children and nursing babes;  
Let the bridegroom go out from his chamber,  
And the bride from her dressing room.

17        Let the priests, who minister to the LORD,  
Weep between the porch and the altar;  
Let them say, “Spare Your people, O LORD,  
And do not give Your heritage to reproach,  
That the nations should rule over them.  
Why should they say among the peoples,  
‘Where *is* their God?’ ”

18        Then the LORD will be zealous for His land,  
And pity His people.

19        The LORD will answer and say to His people,  
“Behold, I will send you grain and new wine and oil,  
And you will be satisfied by them;  
I will no longer make you a reproach among the nations.

20        “*But* I will remove far from you the northern *army*,  
And will drive him away into a barren and desolate land,  
With his face toward the eastern sea  
And his back toward the western sea;  
His stench will come up,  
And his foul odor will rise,  
Because he has done monstrous things.”

21       Fear not, O land;  
      Be glad and rejoice,  
      For the LORD has done marvelous things!  
22       Do not be afraid, you beasts of the field;  
      For the open pastures are springing up,  
      And the tree bears its fruit;  
      The fig tree and the vine yield their strength.  
23       Be glad then, you children of Zion,  
      And rejoice in the LORD your God;  
      For He has given you the former rain faithfully,  
      And He will cause the rain to come down for you—  
      The former rain,  
      And the latter rain in the first *month*.  
24       The threshing floors shall be full of wheat,  
      And the vats shall overflow with new wine and oil.  
25       “So I will restore to you the years that the swarming locust has eaten,  
      The crawling locust,  
      The consuming locust,  
      And the chewing locust,  
      My great army which I sent among you.  
26       You shall eat in plenty and be satisfied,  
      And praise the name of the LORD your God,  
      Who has dealt wondrously with you;  
      And My people shall never be put to shame.  
27       Then you shall know that I *am* in the midst of Israel:  
      I *am* the LORD your God  
      And there is no other.  
      My people shall never be put to shame.  
28       **“And it shall come to pass afterward  
      That I will pour out My Spirit on all flesh;  
      Your sons and your daughters shall prophesy,  
      Your old men shall dream dreams,  
      Your young men shall see visions.**  
29       **And also on My menservants and on My maidservants  
      I will pour out My Spirit in those days.**  
30       **“And I will show wonders in the heavens and in the earth:  
      Blood and fire and pillars of smoke.**  
31       **The sun shall be turned into darkness,  
      And the moon into blood,  
      Before the coming of the great and awesome day of the LORD.**  
32       **And it shall come to pass  
      That whoever calls on the name of the LORD  
      Shall be saved.  
      For in Mount Zion and in Jerusalem there shall be deliverance,  
      As the LORD has said,  
      Among the remnant whom the LORD calls.**

**Chapter 3**

1           “For behold, in those days and at that time,  
When I bring back the captives of Judah and Jerusalem,  
2           I will also gather all nations,  
And bring them down to the Valley of Jehoshaphat;  
And I will enter into judgment with them there  
On account of My people, My heritage Israel,  
Whom they have scattered among the nations;  
They have also divided up My land.  
3           They have cast lots for My people,  
Have given a boy *as payment* for a harlot,  
And sold a girl for wine, that they may drink.  
4           “Indeed, what have you to do with Me,  
O Tyre and Sidon, and all the coasts of Philistia?  
Will you retaliate against Me?  
But if you retaliate against Me,  
Swiftly and speedily I will return your retaliation upon your own head;  
5           Because you have taken My silver and My gold,  
And have carried into your temples My prized possessions.  
6           Also the people of Judah and the people of Jerusalem  
You have sold to the Greeks,  
That you may remove them far from their borders.  
7           “Behold, I will raise them  
Out of the place to which you have sold them,  
And will return your retaliation upon your own head.  
8           I will sell your sons and your daughters  
Into the hand of the people of Judah,  
And they will sell them to the Sabeans,  
To a people far off;  
For the LORD has spoken.”  
9           **Proclaim this among the nations:  
“Prepare for war!  
Wake up the mighty men,  
Let all the men of war draw near,  
Let them come up.  
10           Beat your plowshares into swords  
And your pruning hooks into spears;  
Let the weak say, ‘I *am* strong.’ ”**  
11           **Assemble and come, all you nations,  
And gather together all around.  
Cause Your mighty ones to go down there, O LORD.**  
12           **“Let the nations be wakened, and come up to the Valley of  
Jehoshaphat;**

**For there I will sit to judge all the surrounding nations.**  
 13 **Put in the sickle, for the harvest is ripe.**  
**Come, go down;**  
**For the winepress is full,**  
**The vats overflow—**  
**For their wickedness *is* great.”**  
 14 **Multitudes, multitudes in the valley of decision!**  
**For the day of the LORD *is* near in the valley of decision.**  
 15 **The sun and moon will grow dark,**  
**And the stars will diminish their brightness.**  
 16 **The LORD also will roar from Zion,**  
**And utter His voice from Jerusalem;**  
**The heavens and earth will shake;**  
**But the LORD will be a shelter for His people,**  
**And the strength of the children of Israel.**  
 17 **“So you shall know that I *am* the LORD your God,**  
**Dwelling in Zion My holy mountain.**  
**Then Jerusalem shall be holy,**  
**And no aliens shall ever pass through her again.”**  
 18 **And it will come to pass in that day**  
***That* the mountains shall drip with new wine,**  
**The hills shall flow with milk,**  
**And all the brooks of Judah shall be flooded with water;**  
**A fountain shall flow from the house of the LORD**  
**And water the Valley of Acacias.**  
 19 **“Egypt shall be a desolation,**  
**And Edom a desolate wilderness,**  
**Because of violence *against* the people of Judah,**  
**For they have shed innocent blood in their land.**  
 20 **But Judah shall abide forever,**  
**And Jerusalem from generation to generation.**  
 21 **“For I will acquit them of the guilt of bloodshed, whom I had not**  
**acquitted;**  
**For the LORD dwells in Zion.”<sup>248</sup>**

**Amos 5:18-20 -**

18 **Woe to you who desire the day of the LORD!**  
**For what good *is* the day of the LORD to you?**  
**It *will be* darkness, and not light.**  
 19 **It *will be* as though a man fled from a lion,**

---

<sup>248</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

And a bear met him!  
 Or *as though* he went into the house,  
 Leaned his hand on the wall,  
 And a serpent bit him!

<sup>20</sup> **Is not the day of the LORD darkness, and not light?**  
*Is it not very dark, with no brightness in it?*<sup>249</sup>

### Obadiah 15-18 -

<sup>15</sup> **“For the day of the LORD upon all the nations *is* near;  
 As you have done, it shall be done to you;  
 Your reprisal shall return upon your own head.**

<sup>16</sup> **For as you drank on my holy mountain,  
 So shall all the nations drink continually;  
 Yes, they shall drink, and swallow,  
 And they shall be as though they had never been.**

<sup>17</sup> **“But on Mount Zion there shall be deliverance,  
 And there shall be holiness;  
 The house of Jacob shall possess their possessions.**

<sup>18</sup> The house of Jacob shall be a fire,  
 And the house of Joseph a flame;  
 But the house of Esau *shall be* stubble;  
 They shall kindle them and devour them,  
 And no survivor shall *remain* of the house of Esau,”

For the LORD has spoken.<sup>250</sup>

### Zephaniah Chapters 1-3 -

#### Chapter 1

<sup>1</sup>The word of the LORD which came to Zephaniah the son of Cushi, the son of Gedaliah, the son of Amariah, the son of Hezekiah, in the days of Josiah the son of Amon, king of Judah.

<sup>2</sup> “I will utterly consume everything  
 From the face of the land,”  
 Says the LORD;

<sup>3</sup> “I will consume man and beast;  
 I will consume the birds of the heavens,  
 The fish of the sea,

---

<sup>249</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>250</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

And the stumbling blocks along with the wicked.  
I will cut off man from the face of the land,”  
Says the LORD.

4 “I will stretch out My hand against Judah,  
And against all the inhabitants of Jerusalem.  
I will cut off every trace of Baal from this place,  
The names of the idolatrous priests with the *pagan* priests—  
5 Those who worship the host of heaven on the housetops;  
Those who worship and swear *oaths* by the LORD,  
But who *also* swear by Milcom;  
6 Those who have turned back from *following* the LORD,  
And have not sought the LORD, nor inquired of Him.”

7 **Be silent in the presence of the Lord GOD;  
For the day of the LORD is at hand,  
For the LORD has prepared a sacrifice;  
He has invited His guests.**

8 “And it shall be,  
**In the day of the LORD’s sacrifice,  
That I will punish the princes and the king’s children,  
And all such as are clothed with foreign apparel.**  
9 **In the same day I will punish  
All those who leap over the threshold,  
Who fill their masters’ houses with violence and deceit.**

10 “And there shall be on that day,” says the LORD,  
**“The sound of a mournful cry from the Fish Gate,  
A wailing from the Second Quarter,  
And a loud crashing from the hills.**

11 **Wail, you inhabitants of Maktesh!  
For all the merchant people are cut down;  
All those who handle money are cut off.**

12 “And it shall come to pass at that time  
**That I will search Jerusalem with lamps,  
And punish the men  
Who are settled in complacency,  
Who say in their heart,  
‘The LORD will not do good,  
Nor will He do evil.’**

13 **Therefore their goods shall become booty,  
And their houses a desolation;  
They shall build houses, but not inhabit *them*;  
They shall plant vineyards, but not drink their wine.”**

14 **The great day of the LORD is near;  
*It is near and hastens quickly.*  
The noise of the day of the LORD is bitter;  
There the mighty men shall cry out.**



15       **That day is a day of wrath,  
A day of trouble and distress,  
A day of devastation and desolation,  
A day of darkness and gloominess,  
A day of clouds and thick darkness,**  
16       **A day of trumpet and alarm  
Against the fortified cities  
And against the high towers.**  
17       **“I will bring distress upon men,  
And they shall walk like blind men,  
Because they have sinned against the LORD;  
Their blood shall be poured out like dust,  
And their flesh like refuse.”**  
18       **Neither their silver nor their gold  
Shall be able to deliver them  
In the day of the LORD’s wrath;  
But the whole land shall be devoured  
By the fire of His jealousy,  
For He will make speedy riddance  
Of all those who dwell in the land.**

## **Chapter 2**

1       **Gather yourselves together, yes, gather together,  
O undesirable nation,**  
2       **Before the decree is issued,  
Or the day passes like chaff,  
Before the LORD’s fierce anger comes upon you,  
Before the day of the LORD’s anger comes upon you!**  
3       **Seek the LORD, all you meek of the earth,  
Who have upheld His justice.  
Seek righteousness, seek humility.  
It may be that you will be hidden  
In the day of the LORD’s anger.**  
4       **For Gaza shall be forsaken,  
And Ashkelon desolate;  
They shall drive out Ashdod at noonday,  
And Ekron shall be uprooted.**  
5       **Woe to the inhabitants of the seacoast,  
The nation of the Cherethites!  
The word of the LORD is against you,  
O Canaan, land of the Philistines:  
“I will destroy you;  
So there shall be no inhabitant.”**  
6       **The seacoast shall be pastures,**

With shelters for shepherds and folds for flocks.  
7       The coast shall be for the remnant of the house of Judah;  
They shall feed *their* flocks there;  
In the houses of Ashkelon they shall lie down at evening.  
For the LORD their God will intervene for them,  
And return their captives.  
8       “I have heard the reproach of Moab,  
And the insults of the people of Ammon,  
With which they have reproached My people,  
And made arrogant threats against their borders.  
9       Therefore, as I live,”  
Says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel,  
“Surely Moab shall be like Sodom,  
And the people of Ammon like Gomorrah—  
Overrun with weeds and saltpits,  
And a perpetual desolation.  
The residue of My people shall plunder them,  
And the remnant of My people shall possess them.”  
10       This they shall have for their pride,  
Because they have reproached and made arrogant threats  
Against the people of the LORD of hosts.  
11       The LORD *will be* awesome to them,  
For He will reduce to nothing all the gods of the earth;  
*People* shall worship Him,  
Each one from his place,  
Indeed all the shores of the nations.  
12       “You Ethiopians also,  
You shall be slain by My sword.”  
13       And He will stretch out His hand against the north,  
Destroy Assyria,  
And make Nineveh a desolation,  
As dry as the wilderness.  
14       The herds shall lie down in her midst,  
Every beast of the nation.  
Both the pelican and the bittern  
Shall lodge on the capitals *of her pillars*;  
Their voice shall sing in the windows;  
Desolation *shall be* at the threshold;  
For He will lay bare the cedar work.  
15       This is the rejoicing city  
That dwelt securely,  
That said in her heart,  
“*I am it, and there is none besides me.*”  
How has she become a desolation,  
A place for beasts to lie down!  
Everyone who passes by her

Shall hiss and shake his fist.

### Chapter 3

1           Woe to her who is rebellious and polluted,  
To the oppressing city!  
2           She has not obeyed *His* voice,  
She has not received correction;  
She has not trusted in the LORD,  
She has not drawn near to her God.  
3           Her princes in her midst *are* roaring lions;  
Her judges *are* evening wolves  
That leave not a bone till morning.  
4           Her prophets are insolent, treacherous people;  
Her priests have polluted the sanctuary,  
They have done violence to the law.  
5           The LORD *is* righteous in her midst,  
He will do no unrighteousness.  
Every morning He brings His justice to light;  
He never fails,  
But the unjust knows no shame.  
6           “I have cut off nations,  
Their fortresses are devastated;  
I have made their streets desolate,  
With none passing by.  
Their cities are destroyed;  
*There is* no one, no inhabitant.  
7           **I said, ‘Surely you will fear Me,  
You will receive instruction’—  
So that her dwelling would not be cut off,  
Despite everything for which I punished her.  
But they rose early and corrupted all their deeds.**  
8           **“Therefore wait for Me,” says the LORD,  
“Until the day I rise up for plunder;  
My determination *is* to gather the nations  
To My assembly of kingdoms,  
To pour on them My indignation,  
All my fierce anger;  
All the earth shall be devoured  
With the fire of My jealousy.**  
9           **“For then I will restore to the peoples a pure language,  
That they all may call on the name of the LORD,  
To serve Him with one accord.**  
10          **From beyond the rivers of Ethiopia  
My worshipers,  
The daughter of My dispersed ones,**

- Shall bring My offering.  
11 In that day you shall not be shamed for any of your deeds  
In which you transgress against Me;  
For then I will take away from your midst  
Those who rejoice in your pride,  
And you shall no longer be haughty  
In My holy mountain.
- 12 I will leave in your midst  
A meek and humble people,  
And they shall trust in the name of the LORD.
- 13 The remnant of Israel shall do no unrighteousness  
And speak no lies,  
Nor shall a deceitful tongue be found in their mouth;  
For they shall feed *their* flocks and lie down,  
And no one shall make *them* afraid.”
- 14 Sing, O daughter of Zion!  
Shout, O Israel!  
Be glad and rejoice with all *your* heart,  
O daughter of Jerusalem!
- 15 The LORD has taken away your judgments,  
He has cast out your enemy.  
The King of Israel, the LORD, *is* in your midst;  
You shall see disaster no more.
- 16 In that day it shall be said to Jerusalem:  
“Do not fear;  
Zion, let not your hands be weak.
- 17 The LORD your God in your midst,  
The Mighty One, will save;  
He will rejoice over you with gladness,  
He will quiet *you* with His love,  
He will rejoice over you with singing.”
- 18 “I will gather those who sorrow over the appointed assembly,  
Who are among you,  
*To whom* its reproach *is* a burden.
- 19 Behold, at that time  
I will deal with all who afflict you;  
I will save the lame,  
And gather those who were driven out;  
I will appoint them for praise and fame  
In every land where they were put to shame.
- 20 At that time I will bring you back,  
Even at the time I gather you;  
For I will give you fame and praise  
Among all the peoples of the earth,  
When I return your captives before your eyes,”

**Says the LORD.251****Zechariah Chapter 14 -****Chapter 14**

- 1        **Behold, the day of the LORD is coming,**  
And your spoil will be divided in your midst.
- 2        **For I will gather all the nations to battle against Jerusalem;**  
The city shall be taken,  
The houses rifled,  
And the women ravished.  
Half of the city shall go into captivity,  
But the remnant of the people shall not be cut off from the city.
- 3        **Then the LORD will go forth**  
And fight against those nations,  
As He fights in the day of battle.
- 4        And in that day His feet will stand on the Mount of Olives,  
Which faces Jerusalem on the east.  
And the Mount of Olives shall be split in two,  
From east to west,  
*Making* a very large valley;  
Half of the mountain shall move toward the north  
And half of it toward the south.
- 5        Then you shall flee *through* My mountain valley,  
For the mountain valley shall reach to Azal.  
Yes, you shall flee  
As you fled from the earthquake  
In the days of Uzziah king of Judah.  
Thus the LORD my God will come,  
And all the saints with You.
- 6        It shall come to pass in that day  
*That* there will be no light;  
The lights will diminish.
- 7        It shall be one day  
Which is known to the LORD—  
Neither day nor night.  
But at evening time it shall happen  
*That* it will be light.
- 8        And in that day it shall be  
*That* living waters shall flow from Jerusalem,  
Half of them toward the eastern sea

And half of them toward the western sea;  
In both summer and winter it shall occur.

<sup>9</sup> And the LORD shall be King over all the earth.  
In that day it shall be—  
“The LORD *is* one,”  
And His name one.

<sup>10</sup>All the land shall be turned into a plain from Geba to Rimmon south of Jerusalem. Jerusalem shall be raised up and inhabited in her place from Benjamin’s Gate to the place of the First Gate and the Corner Gate, and *from* the Tower of Hananeel to the king’s winepresses.

<sup>11</sup> ***The people shall dwell in it;  
And no longer shall there be utter destruction,  
But Jerusalem shall be safely inhabited.***

<sup>12</sup>**And this shall be the plague with which the LORD will strike all the people who fought against Jerusalem:**

**Their flesh shall dissolve while they stand on their feet,  
Their eyes shall dissolve in their sockets,  
And their tongues shall dissolve in their mouths.**

<sup>13</sup> **It shall come to pass in that day  
*That* a great panic from the LORD will be among them.  
Everyone will seize the hand of his neighbor,  
And raise his hand against his neighbor’s hand;**

<sup>14</sup> **Judah also will fight at Jerusalem.  
And the wealth of all the surrounding nations  
Shall be gathered together:  
Gold, silver, and apparel in great abundance.**

<sup>15</sup> **Such also shall be the plague  
On the horse *and* the mule,  
On the camel and the donkey,  
And on all the cattle that will be in those camps.  
So *shall* this plague *be*.**

<sup>16</sup>And it shall come to pass *that* everyone who is left of all the nations which came against Jerusalem shall go up from year to year to worship the King, the LORD of hosts, and to keep the Feast of Tabernacles. <sup>17</sup>And it shall be *that* whichever of the families of the earth do not come up to Jerusalem to worship the King, the LORD of hosts, on them there will be no rain. <sup>18</sup>If the family of Egypt will not come up and enter in, they *shall have no rain*; they shall receive the plague with which the LORD strikes the nations who do not come up to keep the Feast of Tabernacles. <sup>19</sup>This shall be the punishment of Egypt and the punishment of all the nations that do not come up to keep the Feast of Tabernacles.

<sup>20</sup>In that day “HOLINESS TO THE LORD” shall be *engraved* on the bells of the horses. The pots in the LORD’s house shall be like the bowls before the altar. <sup>21</sup>Yes, every pot in Jerusalem and Judah shall be holiness to the LORD of hosts. Everyone who

sacrifices shall come and take them and cook in them. In that day there shall no longer be a Canaanite in the house of the LORD of hosts.<sup>252</sup>

### Malachi 4:5-6 -

<sup>5</sup> **Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet**  
**Before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the LORD.**  
<sup>6</sup> And he will turn  
 The hearts of the fathers to the children,  
 And the hearts of the children to their fathers,  
 Lest I come and strike the earth with a curse.”<sup>253</sup>

### Revelation Chapters 8-9 -

#### Chapter 8

<sup>1</sup>When He opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven for about half an hour. <sup>2</sup>And I saw the seven angels who stand before God, and to them were given seven trumpets. <sup>3</sup>Then another angel, having a golden censer, came and stood at the altar. He was given much incense, that he should offer *it* with the prayers of all the saints upon the golden altar which was before the throne. <sup>4</sup>And the smoke of the incense, with the prayers of the saints, ascended before God from the angel's hand. <sup>5</sup>Then the angel took the censer, filled it with fire from the altar, and threw *it* to the earth. And there were noises, thunderings, lightnings, and an earthquake. <sup>6</sup>So the seven angels who had the seven trumpets prepared themselves to sound.

<sup>7</sup>The first angel sounded: And hail and fire followed, mingled with blood, and they were thrown to the earth. And a third of the trees were burned up, and all green grass was burned up.

<sup>8</sup>Then the second angel sounded: And *something* like a great mountain burning with fire was thrown into the sea, and a third of the sea became blood. <sup>9</sup>And a third of the living creatures in the sea died, and a third of the ships were destroyed.

<sup>10</sup>Then the third angel sounded: And a great star fell from heaven, burning like a torch, and it fell on a third of the rivers and on the springs of water. <sup>11</sup>The name of the star is Wormwood. A third of the waters became wormwood, and many men died from the water, because it was made bitter.

<sup>12</sup>Then the fourth angel sounded: And a third of the sun was struck, a third of the moon, and a third of the stars, so that a third of them were darkened. A third of the day did not shine, and likewise the night. <sup>13</sup>And I looked, and I heard an angel flying through the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice, “Woe, woe, woe to the inhabitants of the

---

<sup>252</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>253</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

earth, because of the remaining blasts of the trumpet of the three angels who are about to sound!”

## Chapter 9

<sup>1</sup>Then the fifth angel sounded: And I saw a star fallen from heaven to the earth. To him was given the key to the bottomless pit. <sup>2</sup>And he opened the bottomless pit, and smoke arose out of the pit like the smoke of a great furnace. So the sun and the air were darkened because of the smoke of the pit. <sup>3</sup>Then out of the smoke locusts came upon the earth. And to them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power. <sup>4</sup>They were commanded not to harm the grass of the earth, or any green thing, or any tree, but only those men who do not have the seal of God on their foreheads. <sup>5</sup>And they were not given *authority* to kill them, but to torment them *for* five months. Their torment *was* like the torment of a scorpion when it strikes a man. <sup>6</sup>In those days men will seek death and will not find it; they will desire to die, and death will flee from them. <sup>7</sup>The shape of the locusts was like horses prepared for battle. On their heads were crowns of something like gold, and their faces *were* like the faces of men. <sup>8</sup>They had hair like women’s hair, and their teeth were like lions’ *teeth*. <sup>9</sup>And they had breastplates like breastplates of iron, and the sound of their wings *was* like the sound of chariots with many horses running into battle. <sup>10</sup>They had tails like scorpions, and there were stings in their tails. Their power *was* to hurt men five months. <sup>11</sup>And they had as king over them the angel of the bottomless pit, whose name in Hebrew *is* Abaddon, but in Greek he has the name Apollyon. <sup>12</sup>One woe is past. Behold, still two more woes are coming after these things.

<sup>13</sup>Then the sixth angel sounded: And I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar which is before God, <sup>14</sup>saying to the sixth angel who had the trumpet, “Release the four angels who are bound at the great river Euphrates.” <sup>15</sup>So the four angels, who had been prepared for the hour and day and month and year, were released to kill a third of mankind. <sup>16</sup>Now the number of the army of the horsemen *was* two hundred million; I heard the number of them. <sup>17</sup>And thus I saw the horses in the vision: those who sat on them had breastplates of fiery red, hyacinth blue, and sulfur yellow; and the heads of the horses *were* like the heads of lions; and out of their mouths came fire, smoke, and brimstone. <sup>18</sup>By these three *plagues* a third of mankind was killed—by the fire and the smoke and the brimstone which came out of their mouths. <sup>19</sup>For their power is in their mouth and in their tails; for their tails *are* like serpents, having heads; and with them they do harm. <sup>20</sup>But the rest of mankind, who were not killed by these plagues, did not repent of the works of their hands, that they should not worship demons, and idols of gold, silver, brass, stone, and wood, which can neither see nor hear nor walk. <sup>21</sup>And they did not repent of their murders or their sorceries or their sexual immorality or their thefts.254

## Revelation Chapters 15-16 -

### Chapter 15

<sup>1</sup>Then I saw another sign in heaven, great and marvelous: seven angels having the seven last plagues, for in them the wrath of God is complete. <sup>2</sup>And I saw *something* like a



sea of glass mingled with fire, and those who have the victory over the beast, over his image and over his mark *and* over the number of his name, standing on the sea of glass, having harps of God. <sup>3</sup>They sing the song of Moses, the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying:

“Great and marvelous *are* Your works,  
Lord God Almighty!  
Just and true *are* Your ways,  
O King of the saints!

<sup>4</sup> Who shall not fear You, O Lord, and glorify Your name?  
For *You* alone *are* holy.  
For all nations shall come and worship before You,  
For Your judgments have been manifested.”

<sup>5</sup>After these things I looked, and behold, the temple of the tabernacle of the testimony in heaven was opened. <sup>6</sup>And out of the temple came the seven angels having the seven plagues, clothed in pure bright linen, and having their chests girded with golden bands. <sup>7</sup>Then one of the four living creatures gave to the seven angels seven golden bowls full of the wrath of God who lives forever and ever. <sup>8</sup>The temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God and from His power, and no one was able to enter the temple till the seven plagues of the seven angels were completed.

## Chapter 16

<sup>1</sup>Then I heard a loud voice from the temple saying to the seven angels, “Go and pour out the bowls of the wrath of God on the earth.”

<sup>2</sup>So the first went and poured out his bowl upon the earth, and a foul and loathsome sore came upon the men who had the mark of the beast and those who worshiped his image.

<sup>3</sup>Then the second angel poured out his bowl on the sea, and it became blood as of a dead *man*; and every living creature in the sea died.

<sup>4</sup>Then the third angel poured out his bowl on the rivers and springs of water, and they became blood. <sup>5</sup>And I heard the angel of the waters saying:

“You are righteous, O Lord,  
The One who is and who was and who is to be,  
Because You have judged these things.

<sup>6</sup> For they have shed the blood of saints and prophets,  
And You have given them blood to drink.  
For it is their just due.”

<sup>7</sup>And I heard another from the altar saying, “Even so, Lord God Almighty, true and righteous *are* Your judgments.”

<sup>8</sup>Then the fourth angel poured out his bowl on the sun, and power was given to him to scorch men with fire. <sup>9</sup>And men were scorched with great heat, and they blasphemed the name of God who has power over these plagues; and they did not repent and give Him glory.

<sup>10</sup>Then the fifth angel poured out his bowl on the throne of the beast, and his kingdom became full of darkness; and they gnawed their tongues because of the pain. <sup>11</sup>They

blasphemed the God of heaven because of their pains and their sores, and did not repent of their deeds.

<sup>12</sup>Then the sixth angel poured out his bowl on the great river Euphrates, and its water was dried up, so that the way of the kings from the east might be prepared. <sup>13</sup>And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs *coming* out of the mouth of the dragon, out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet. <sup>14</sup>For they are spirits of demons, performing signs, *which* go out to the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty. <sup>15</sup>“Behold, I am coming as a thief. Blessed is he who watches, and keeps his garments, lest he walk naked and they see his shame.” <sup>16</sup>And they gathered them together to the place called in Hebrew, Armageddon.

<sup>17</sup>Then the seventh angel poured out his bowl into the air, and a loud voice came out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, “It is done!” <sup>18</sup>And there were noises and thunderings and lightnings; and there was a great earthquake, such a mighty and great earthquake as had not occurred since men were on the earth. <sup>19</sup>Now the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell. And great Babylon was remembered before God, to give her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of His wrath. <sup>20</sup>Then every island fled away, and the mountains were not found. <sup>21</sup>And great hail from heaven fell upon men, *each hailstone* about the weight of a talent. Men blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail, since that plague was exceedingly great. 255

## Revelation Chapter 22 -

### Chapter 22

<sup>1</sup>And he showed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding from the throne of God and of the Lamb. <sup>2</sup>In the middle of its street, and on either side of the river, *was* the tree of life, which bore twelve fruits, each *tree* yielding its fruit every month. The leaves of the tree *were* for the healing of the nations. <sup>3</sup>And there shall be no more curse, but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it, and His servants shall serve Him. <sup>4</sup>They shall see His face, and His name *shall be* on their foreheads. <sup>5</sup>There shall be no night there: They need no lamp nor light of the sun, for the Lord God gives them light. And they shall reign forever and ever.

<sup>6</sup>Then he said to me, “These words *are* faithful and true.” And the Lord God of the holy prophets sent His angel to show His servants the things which must shortly take place. <sup>7</sup>“Behold, I am coming quickly! Blessed is he who keeps the words of the prophecy of this book.” <sup>8</sup>Now I, John, saw and heard these things. And when I heard and saw, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel who showed me these things. <sup>9</sup>Then he said to me, “See *that you do not do that*. For I am your fellow servant, and of your brethren the prophets, and of those who keep the words of this book. Worship God.” <sup>10</sup>And he said to me, “Do not seal the words of the prophecy of this book, for the time is at hand. <sup>11</sup>“He who is unjust, let him be unjust still; he who is filthy, let him be filthy still; he who is righteous, let him be righteous still; he who is holy, let him be holy still.” <sup>12</sup>

“And behold, I am coming quickly, and My reward *is* with Me, to give to every one according to his work. <sup>13</sup>“I am the Alpha and the Omega, *the Beginning and the End*, the

**First and the Last.”** <sup>14</sup>**Blessed are those who do His commandments, that they may have the right to the tree of life, and may enter through the gates into the city.** <sup>15</sup>**But outside are dogs and sorcerers and sexually immoral and murderers and idolaters, and whoever loves and practices a lie.** <sup>16</sup>**“I, Jesus, have sent My angel to testify to you these things in the churches. I am the Root and the Offspring of David, the Bright and Morning Star.”** <sup>17</sup>And the Spirit and the bride say, “Come!” And let him who hears say, “Come!” And let him who thirsts come. Whoever desires, let him take the water of life freely.

<sup>18</sup>For I testify to everyone who hears the words of the prophecy of this book: If anyone adds to these things, God will add to him the plagues that are written in this book; <sup>19</sup>and if anyone takes away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part from the Book of Life, from the holy city, and *from* the things which are written in this book.

<sup>20</sup>He who testifies to these things says, **“Surely I am coming quickly.”** Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus! <sup>21</sup>The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with you all. Amen.<sup>256</sup>

*Thus when Jesus comes back, He will begin to establish His kingdom and we will work further toward the final order that will ultimately culminate in the new heaven, new earth and New Jerusalem where we will live forever with God.*

### **3. Selfishness vs. Generosity -**

***SELFISHNESS is a result of pride and fear working together in a person’s heart. When someone thinks too highly of themselves and are afraid of not having enough, they will become selfish and greedy. This self-seeking in the heart will cause them to operate in fleshly, human wisdom, which as we saw above in James 3:14-16 comes from the devil. Selfish people do not and indeed cannot operate in love, because love does not consider itself. True Christians will exhibit GENEROSITY. The life of a Christian is a life of giving; giving of time, money and possessions. Though the Bible tells us to give a tithe or ten percent of our increase to God, perfected Christians will dedicate their entire earnings and possessions to God. That is not to say that they will give all their money and possessions to a disobedient church. They may keep control of their money and possessions as God shows them, but they will let God know that they are WILLING to give these things up as He sees fit. They will obey God when He says to do something with the money or possessions. These true Christians will be willing to rely on God completely for ALL their needs. This also does not mean that they will be poor; quite the contrary, they will be well cared for, since according to the ‘seedtime and harvest principle’, whatever we generously give with a cheerful heart will be multiplied back to us. That is why it is more blessed to give than to receive, because when we give, we sow seeds that will be multiplied back to us. Generous people will always have more than those who are selfish, (especially in the kingdom of God). Giving is the best way to assure that one is well taken care of in this life and the next. Selfish people will end up in the lake of fire, (see the teaching, ‘Show Me the Money’, Genesis 8:22, II Peter 2:9-10***

---

<sup>256</sup>The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

*above, Deuteronomy 15:7-11, Psalm 37:21, Vv. 25-26, Psalm chapter 112, Proverbs 11:24-25, 18:1, 19:17, 22:9, 28:22, v. 25, Isaiah 32:5-8, Matthew 19:16-30, Luke 6:38, Romans 2:1-16, 13:11-14, I Corinthians 13:4-8, II Corinthians 9:6-15, 12:14-21, Galatians 6:1-10, Ephesians chapter 2 and I Timothy 6:17-19).*

### **Deuteronomy 15:7-11 -**

<sup>7</sup> “But if there are any poor people in your towns when you arrive in the land the LORD your God is giving you, do not be hard-hearted or tightfisted toward them. <sup>8</sup> **Instead, be generous and lend them whatever they need. <sup>9</sup> Do not be mean-spirited and refuse someone a loan because the year of release is close at hand. If you refuse to make the loan and the needy person cries out to the LORD, you will be considered guilty of sin. <sup>10</sup> Give freely without begrudging it, and the LORD your God will bless you in everything you do. <sup>11</sup> There will always be some among you who are poor. That is why I am commanding you to share your resources freely with the poor and with other Israelites in need.**<sup>257</sup>

### **Psalm 37:21 -**

<sup>21</sup> The wicked borrow and never repay,  
but the godly are generous givers.<sup>258</sup>

### **Psalm 37:25-26 -**

<sup>25</sup> Once I was young, and now I am old.  
Yet I have never seen the godly forsaken,  
nor seen their children begging for bread.  
<sup>26</sup> **The godly always give generous loans to others,  
and their children are a blessing.**<sup>259</sup>

### **Psalm Chapter 112 -**

#### **Psalm 112**

<sup>1</sup> Praise the LORD!  
Blessed *is* the man *who* fears the LORD,  
*Who* delights greatly in His commandments.  
<sup>2</sup> His descendants will be mighty on earth;  
The generation of the upright will be blessed.

---

<sup>257</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>258</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>259</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>3</sup> Wealth and riches *will be* in his house,  
 And his righteousness endures forever.  
<sup>4</sup> Unto the upright there arises light in the darkness;  
*He is* gracious, and full of compassion, and righteous.  
<sup>5</sup> **A good man deals graciously and lends;**  
**He will guide his affairs with discretion.**  
<sup>6</sup> **Surely he will never be shaken;**  
**The righteous will be in everlasting remembrance.**  
<sup>7</sup> He will not be afraid of evil tidings;  
 His heart is steadfast, trusting in the LORD.  
<sup>8</sup> His heart *is* established;  
 He will not be afraid,  
 Until he sees *his desire* upon his enemies.  
<sup>9</sup> **He has dispersed abroad,**  
**He has given to the poor;**  
**His righteousness endures forever;**  
**His horn will be exalted with honor.**  
<sup>10</sup> The wicked will see *it* and be grieved;  
 He will gnash his teeth and melt away;  
 The desire of the wicked shall perish.<sup>260</sup>

#### Proverbs 11:24-25 -

<sup>24</sup> There is *one* who scatters, yet increases more;  
 And there is *one* who withholds more than is right,  
 But it *leads* to poverty.  
<sup>25</sup> The generous soul will be made rich,  
 And he who waters will also be watered himself.<sup>261</sup>

#### Proverbs 18:1 -

<sup>1</sup> A man who isolates himself seeks his own desire;  
 He rages against all wise judgment.<sup>262</sup>

*In another version -*

**18** It's selfish and stupid  
 to think only of yourself

---

<sup>260</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>261</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>262</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

and to sneer at people  
who have sense.<sup>263</sup>

**Proverbs 19:17 -**

<sup>17</sup> If you help the poor, you are lending to the LORD—and he will repay you!<sup>264</sup>

**Proverbs 22:9 -**

<sup>9</sup> He who has a generous eye will be blessed,  
For he gives of his bread to the poor.<sup>265</sup>

**Proverbs 28:22 -**

<sup>22</sup> A greedy person tries to get rich quick, but it only leads to poverty.<sup>266</sup>

**Proverbs 28:25 -**

<sup>25</sup> Greed causes fighting; trusting the LORD leads to prosperity.<sup>267</sup>

**Isaiah 32:5-8 -**

<sup>5</sup> In that day ungodly fools will not be heroes. Wealthy cheaters will not be respected as outstanding citizens. <sup>6</sup> Everyone will recognize ungodly fools for what they are. They spread lies about the LORD; they deprive the hungry of food and give no water to the thirsty. <sup>7</sup> The smooth tricks of evil people will be exposed, including all the lies they use to oppress the poor in the courts. <sup>8</sup> **But good people will be generous to others and will be blessed for all they do.**<sup>268</sup>

**Matthew 19:16-30 -**

---

<sup>263</sup>*The Contemporary English [computer file], electronic ed., Logos Library System,* (Nashville: Thomas Nelson) 1997, c1995 by the American Bible Society.

<sup>264</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation,* (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>265</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version,* (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>266</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation,* (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>267</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation,* (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>268</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation,* (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>16</sup>Now behold, one came and said to Him, “Good Teacher, what good thing shall I do that I may have eternal life?” <sup>17</sup>So He said to him, “**Why do you call Me good? No one is good but One, that is, God. But if you want to enter into life, keep the commandments.**” <sup>18</sup>He said to Him, “Which ones?” Jesus said, “**‘You shall not murder,’ ‘You shall not commit adultery,’ ‘You shall not steal,’ ‘You shall not bear false witness,’** <sup>19</sup>‘Honor your father and *your* mother,’ and, ‘You shall love your neighbor as yourself.’” <sup>20</sup>The young man said to Him, “All these things I have kept from my youth. What do I still lack?” <sup>21</sup>**Jesus said to him, “If you want to be perfect, go, sell what you have and give to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven; and come, follow Me.”** <sup>22</sup>**But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful, for he had great possessions.** <sup>23</sup>**Then Jesus said to His disciples, “Assuredly, I say to you that it is hard for a rich man to enter the kingdom of heaven.** <sup>24</sup>**“And again I say to you, it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God.”** <sup>25</sup>When His disciples heard *it*, they were greatly astonished, saying, “Who then can be saved?” <sup>26</sup>But Jesus looked at *them* and said to them, “**With men this is impossible, but with God all things are possible.**” <sup>27</sup>Then Peter answered and said to Him, “See, we have left all and followed You. Therefore what shall we have?” <sup>28</sup>**So Jesus said to them, “Assuredly I say to you, that in the regeneration, when the Son of Man sits on the throne of His glory, you who have followed Me will also sit on twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.** <sup>29</sup>**“And everyone who has left houses or brothers or sisters or father or mother or wife or children or lands, for My name’s sake, shall receive a hundredfold, and inherit eternal life.** <sup>30</sup>**“But many *who are* first will be last, and the last first.”**<sup>269</sup>

### Luke 6:38 -

<sup>38</sup>**“Give, and it will be given to you: good measure, pressed down, shaken together, and running over will be put into your bosom. For with the same measure that you use, it will be measured back to you.”**<sup>270</sup>

### Romans 2:1-16 -

#### *God’s Judgment of Sin*

**2** You may be saying, “What terrible people you have been talking about!” But you are just as bad, and you have no excuse! When you say they are wicked and should be punished, you are condemning yourself, for you do these very same things. <sup>2</sup> And we know that God, in his justice, will punish anyone who does such things. <sup>3</sup> Do you think that God will judge and condemn others for doing them and not judge you when you do them, too? <sup>4</sup> Don’t you realize how kind, tolerant, and patient God is with you? Or don’t you care? Can’t you see how kind he has been in giving you time to turn from your sin?

---

<sup>269</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>270</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>5</sup> But no, you won't listen. So you are storing up terrible punishment for yourself because of your stubbornness in refusing to turn from your sin. For there is going to come a day of judgment when God, the just judge of all the world, <sup>6</sup> will judge all people according to what they have done. <sup>7</sup> He will give eternal life to those who persist in doing what is good, seeking after the glory and honor and immortality that God offers. <sup>8</sup> But he will pour out his anger and wrath on those who live for themselves, who refuse to obey the truth and practice evil deeds. <sup>9</sup> There will be trouble and calamity for everyone who keeps on sinning—for the Jew first and also for the Gentile. <sup>10</sup> But there will be glory and honor and peace from God for all who do good—for the Jew first and also for the Gentile. <sup>11</sup> For God does not show favoritism.

<sup>12</sup> God will punish the Gentiles when they sin, even though they never had God's written law. And he will punish the Jews when they sin, for they do have the law. <sup>13</sup> For it is not merely knowing the law that brings God's approval. Those who obey the law will be declared right in God's sight. <sup>14</sup> Even when Gentiles, who do not have God's written law, instinctively follow what the law says, they show that in their hearts they know right from wrong. <sup>15</sup> They demonstrate that God's law is written within them, for their own consciences either accuse them or tell them they are doing what is right. <sup>16</sup> The day will surely come when God, by Jesus Christ, will judge everyone's secret life. This is my message.<sup>271</sup>

#### **Romans 13:11-14 -**

##### **The Day When Christ Returns**

<sup>11</sup> You know what sort of times we live in, and so you should live properly. It is time to wake up. You know that the day when we will be saved is nearer now than when we first put our faith in the Lord. <sup>12</sup> Night is almost over, and day will soon appear. We must stop behaving as people do in the dark and be ready to live in the light. <sup>13</sup> So behave properly, as people do in the day. Don't go to wild parties or get drunk or be vulgar or indecent. Don't quarrel or be jealous. <sup>14</sup> Let the Lord Jesus Christ be as near to you as the clothes you wear. Then you won't try to satisfy your selfish desires.<sup>272</sup>

#### **I Corinthians 13:4-8 -**

<sup>4</sup> Love suffers long *and* is kind; love does not envy; love does not parade itself, is not puffed up; <sup>5</sup> does not behave rudely, **does not seek its own**, is not provoked, thinks no evil; <sup>6</sup> does not rejoice in iniquity, but rejoices in the truth; <sup>7</sup> bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things. <sup>8</sup> Love never fails. But whether *there are*

---

271 *Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

272 *The Contemporary English [computer file], electronic ed., Logos Library System*, (Nashville: Thomas Nelson) 1997, c1995 by the American Bible Society.



prophecies, they will fail; whether *there are* tongues, they will cease; whether *there is* knowledge, it will vanish away.<sup>273</sup>

*In another translation...*

<sup>4</sup> Love is patient and kind. Love is not jealous or boastful or proud <sup>5</sup> or rude. **Love does not demand its own way.** Love is not irritable, and it keeps no record of when it has been wronged. <sup>6</sup> It is never glad about injustice but rejoices whenever the truth wins out. <sup>7</sup> Love never gives up, never loses faith, is always hopeful, and endures through every circumstance.

<sup>8</sup> Love will last forever, but prophecy and speaking in unknown languages and special knowledge will all disappear.<sup>274</sup>

*And another...*

<sup>4</sup> Love is kind and patient,  
never jealous, boastful,  
proud, or <sup>5</sup> rude.  
**Love isn't selfish**  
or quick tempered.  
It doesn't keep a record  
of wrongs that others do.  
<sup>6</sup> Love rejoices in the truth,  
but not in evil.  
<sup>7</sup> Love is always supportive,  
loyal, hopeful,  
and trusting.  
<sup>8</sup> Love never fails!<sup>275</sup>

## II Corinthians 9:6-15 -

**<sup>6</sup>But this I say: He who sows sparingly will also reap sparingly, and he who sows bountifully will also reap bountifully. <sup>7</sup>So let each one give as he purposes in his heart, not grudgingly or of necessity; for God loves a cheerful giver. <sup>8</sup>And God is able to make all grace abound toward you, that you, always having all sufficiency in all things, may have an abundance for every good work. <sup>9</sup>As it is written:**

**“He has dispersed abroad,  
He has given to the poor;  
His righteousness endures forever.”**

---

<sup>273</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>274</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>275</sup>*The Contemporary English [computer file], electronic ed., Logos Library System*, (Nashville: Thomas Nelson) 1997, c1995 by the American Bible Society.

<sup>10</sup>Now may He who supplies seed to the sower, and bread for food, supply and multiply the seed you have *sown* and increase the fruits of your righteousness, <sup>11</sup>while *you are* enriched in everything for all liberality, which causes thanksgiving through us to God. <sup>12</sup>For the administration of this service not only supplies the needs of the saints, but also is abounding through many thanksgivings to God, <sup>13</sup>while, through the proof of this ministry, they glorify God for the obedience of your confession to the gospel of Christ, and for *your* liberal sharing with them and all *men*, <sup>14</sup>and by their prayer for you, who long for you because of the exceeding grace of God in you. <sup>15</sup>Thanks *be* to God for His indescribable gift!<sup>276</sup>

## II Corinthians 12:14-21 -

<sup>14</sup>Now *for* the third time I am ready to come to you. And I will not be burdensome to you; for I do not seek yours, but you. For the children ought not to lay up for the parents, but the parents for the children. <sup>15</sup>**And I will very gladly spend and be spent for your souls; though the more abundantly I love you, the less I am loved.** <sup>16</sup>But be that *as it may*, I did not burden you. Nevertheless, being crafty, I caught you by cunning! <sup>17</sup>Did I take advantage of you by any of those whom I sent to you? <sup>18</sup>I urged Titus, and sent our brother with *him*. Did Titus take advantage of you? Did we not walk in the same spirit? Did *we* not *walk* in the same steps? <sup>19</sup>Again, do you think that we excuse ourselves to you? We speak before God in Christ. But *we do* all things, beloved, for your edification. <sup>20</sup>**For I fear lest, when I come, I shall not find you such as I wish, and *that* I shall be found by you such as you do not wish; lest *there be* contentions, jealousies, outbursts of wrath, selfish ambitions, backbitings, whisperings, conceits, tumults; <sup>21</sup>lest, when I come again, my God will humble me among you, and I shall mourn for many who have sinned before and have not repented of the uncleanness, fornication, and lewdness which they have practiced.**<sup>277</sup>

## Galatians 6:1-10 -

### Help Each Other

**6** My friends, you are spiritual. So if someone is trapped in sin, you should gently lead that person back to the right path. But watch out, and don't be tempted yourself. <sup>2</sup>You obey the law of Christ when you offer each other a helping hand.

<sup>3</sup>If you think you are better than others, when you really aren't, you are wrong. <sup>4</sup>Do your own work well, and then you will have something to be proud of. But don't compare yourself with others. <sup>5</sup>We each must carry our own load.

<sup>6</sup>Share every good thing you have with anyone who teaches you what God has said.

<sup>7</sup>You cannot fool God, so don't make a fool of yourself! You will harvest what you plant. <sup>8</sup>If you follow your selfish desires, you will harvest destruction, but if you follow the Spirit, you will harvest eternal life. <sup>9</sup>Don't get tired of helping others. You will be

---

<sup>276</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>277</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

rewarded when the time is right, if you don't give up. <sup>10</sup> **We should help people whenever we can, especially if they are followers of the Lord.**<sup>278</sup>

## Ephesians Chapter 2 -

### Chapter 2

<sup>1</sup>And you *He made alive*, who were dead in trespasses and sins, <sup>2</sup>in which you once walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit who now works in the sons of disobedience, <sup>3</sup>among whom also we all once conducted ourselves in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind, and were by nature children of wrath, just as the others. <sup>4</sup>But God, who is rich in mercy, because of His great love with which He loved us, <sup>5</sup>even when we were dead in trespasses, made us alive together with Christ (by grace you have been saved), <sup>6</sup>and raised *us* up together, and made *us* sit together in the heavenly *places* in Christ Jesus, <sup>7</sup>that in the ages to come He might show the exceeding riches of His grace in *His* kindness toward us in Christ Jesus. <sup>8</sup>**For by grace you have been saved through faith, and that not of yourselves; it is the gift of God, <sup>9</sup>not of works, lest anyone should boast. <sup>10</sup>For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus for good works, which God prepared beforehand that we should walk in them.**

<sup>11</sup>Therefore remember that you, once Gentiles in the flesh—who are called Uncircumcision by what is called the Circumcision made in the flesh by hands—<sup>12</sup>that at that time you were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope and without God in the world. <sup>13</sup>But now in Christ Jesus you who once were far off have been brought near by the blood of Christ.

<sup>14</sup>For He Himself is our peace, who has made both one, and has broken down the middle wall of separation, <sup>15</sup>having abolished in His flesh the enmity, *that is*, the law of commandments *contained* in ordinances, so as to create in Himself one new man *from* the two, *thus* making peace, <sup>16</sup>and that He might reconcile them both to God in one body through the cross, thereby putting to death the enmity. <sup>17</sup>And He came and preached peace to you who were afar off and to those who were near. <sup>18</sup>For through Him we both have access by one Spirit to the Father.

<sup>19</sup>Now, therefore, you are no longer strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints and members of the household of God, <sup>20</sup>having been built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ Himself being the chief *cornerstone*, <sup>21</sup>in whom the whole building, being joined together, grows into a holy temple in the Lord, <sup>22</sup>in whom you also are being built together for a dwelling place of God in the Spirit.<sup>279</sup>

*In another translation...*

### From Death to Life

---

<sup>278</sup>*The Contemporary English [computer file], electronic ed., Logos Library System, (Nashville: Thomas Nelson) 1997, c1995 by the American Bible Society.*

<sup>279</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.*

**2** In the past you were dead because you sinned and fought against God. <sup>2</sup> You followed the ways of this world and obeyed the devil. He rules the world, and his spirit has power over everyone who doesn't obey God. <sup>3</sup> Once we were also ruled by the selfish desires of our bodies and minds. We had made God angry, and we were going to be punished like everyone else.

<sup>4-5</sup> But God was merciful! We were dead because of our sins, but God loved us so much that he made us alive with Christ, and God's wonderful kindness is what saves you. <sup>6</sup> God raised us from death to life with Christ Jesus, and he has given us a place beside Christ in heaven. <sup>7</sup> God did this so that in the future world he could show how truly good and kind he is to us because of what Christ Jesus has done. <sup>8</sup> You were saved by faith in God, who treats us much better than we deserve. This is God's gift to you, and not anything you have done on your own. <sup>9</sup> It isn't something you have earned, so there is nothing you can brag about. <sup>10</sup> God planned for us to do good things and to live as he has always wanted us to live. That's why he sent Christ to make us what we are.

#### United by Christ

<sup>11</sup> Don't forget that you are Gentiles. In fact, you used to be called "uncircumcised" by those who take pride in being circumcised. <sup>12</sup> At that time you did not know about Christ. You were foreigners to the people of Israel, and you had no part in the promises that God had made to them. You were living in this world without hope and without God, <sup>13</sup> and you were far from God. But Christ offered his life's blood as a sacrifice and brought you near God.

<sup>14</sup> Christ has made peace between Jews and Gentiles, and he has united us by breaking down the wall of hatred that separated us. Christ gave his own body <sup>15</sup> to destroy the Law of Moses with all its rules and commands. He even brought Jews and Gentiles together as though we were only one person, when he united us in peace. <sup>16</sup> On the cross Christ did away with our hatred for each other. He also made peace between us and God by uniting Jews and Gentiles in one body. <sup>17</sup> Christ came and preached peace to you Gentiles, who were far from God, and peace to us Jews, who were near God. <sup>18</sup> And because of Christ, all of us can come to the Father by the same Spirit.

<sup>19</sup> You Gentiles are no longer strangers and foreigners. You are citizens with everyone else who belongs to the family of God. <sup>20</sup> You are like a building with the apostles and prophets as the foundation and with Christ as the most important stone. <sup>21</sup> Christ is the one who holds the building together and makes it grow into a holy temple for the Lord. <sup>22</sup> And you are part of that building Christ has built as a place for God's own Spirit to live.<sup>280</sup>

#### I Timothy 6:17-19 -

<sup>17</sup> Tell those who are rich in this world not to be proud and not to trust in their money, which will soon be gone. But their trust should be in the living God, who richly gives us all we need for our enjoyment. <sup>18</sup> Tell them to use their money to do good. They should be rich in good works and should give generously to those in need, always being ready to

share with others whatever God has given them. <sup>19</sup> By doing this they will be storing up their treasure as a good foundation for the future so that they may take hold of real life.<sup>281</sup>

*It is only when we truly abide in Christ that we can, through the grace or power of the Holy Spirit, overcome our selfish desires. God is love, (I John 4:8 & 16 above). If we abide in Jesus, then we will also be love. Love is not selfish; it is generous, (see I Corinthians 13:5 above). Love is not afraid to give. It is not afraid of lack or for that matter, love is not afraid of anything but God. Love would be willing to give anything to another person, especially to obedient Christians, knowing that God will multiply it back to them in this life and the next, (Matthew 19:29, John 15:13-14 and Ephesians 6:10 above). When we give generous gifts, then we will become like God. There is no greater gift than the gift of eternal life, which is symbolized by the laying down of one's life for other obedient Christians, as Jesus did. **We are not called to lay down our lives for non-believers or disobedient Christians, only for those who are the friends of Jesus. We are Jesus' friends if we OBEY Him. We 'lay down our lives' for obedient Christians by GIVING GENEROUSLY of our time, money and resources and considering them above ourselves.** This way of life also opens the door to receive more wisdom, understanding and revelatory knowledge from God, which then leads to more generosity, more love and so forth. This IS the life of a TRUE Christian, (see John 15:13-14, James chapter 4, I John 3:16-24 above, Romans 5:12-21, Ephesians 5:1-2, Philippians 2:3-4, Colossians 1:7-14, chapter 3 and I Thessalonians 4:9-12).*

### **Romans 5:12-21 -**

#### *Adam and Christ Contrasted*

<sup>12</sup> When Adam sinned, sin entered the entire human race. Adam's sin brought death, so death spread to everyone, for everyone sinned. <sup>13</sup> Yes, people sinned even before the law was given. And though there was no law to break, since it had not yet been given, <sup>14</sup> they all died anyway—even though they did not disobey an explicit commandment of God, as Adam did. What a contrast between Adam and Christ, who was yet to come! <sup>15</sup> **And what a difference between our sin and God's generous gift of forgiveness. For this one man, Adam, brought death to many through his sin. But this other man, Jesus Christ, brought forgiveness to many through God's bountiful gift.** <sup>16</sup> **And the result of God's gracious gift is very different from the result of that one man's sin. For Adam's sin led to condemnation, but we have the free gift of being accepted by God, even though we are guilty of many sins.** <sup>17</sup> **The sin of this one man, Adam, caused death to rule over us, but all who receive God's wonderful, gracious gift of righteousness will live in triumph over sin and death through this one man, Jesus Christ.**

<sup>18</sup> Yes, Adam's one sin brought condemnation upon everyone, but Christ's one act of righteousness makes all people right in God's sight and gives them life. <sup>19</sup> Because one

---

<sup>281</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.*

person disobeyed God, many people became sinners. But because one other person obeyed God, many people will be made right in God's sight.

<sup>20</sup> God's law was given so that all people could see how sinful they were. But as people sinned more and more, God's wonderful kindness became more abundant. <sup>21</sup> So just as sin ruled over all people and brought them to death, now God's wonderful kindness rules instead, giving us right standing with God and resulting in eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.<sup>282</sup>

### **Ephesians 5:1-2 -**

**5** Follow God's example in everything you do, because you are his dear children. <sup>2</sup> **Live a life filled with love for others, following the example of Christ, who loved you and gave himself as a sacrifice to take away your sins.** And God was pleased, because that sacrifice was like sweet perfume to him.<sup>283</sup>

### **Philippians 2:3-4 -**

<sup>3</sup> Don't be selfish; don't live to make a good impression on others. **Be humble, thinking of others as better than yourself.** <sup>4</sup> Don't think only about your own affairs, but be interested in others, too, and what they are doing.<sup>284</sup>

### **Colossians 1:7-14 -**

<sup>7</sup> Epaphras, our much loved co-worker, was the one who brought you the Good News. He is Christ's faithful servant, and he is helping us in your place. <sup>8</sup> He is the one who told us about the great love for others that the Holy Spirit has given you.

<sup>9</sup> **So we have continued praying for you ever since we first heard about you. We ask God to give you a complete understanding of what he wants to do in your lives, and we ask him to make you wise with spiritual wisdom.** <sup>10</sup> **Then the way you live will always honor and please the Lord, and you will continually do good, kind things for others. All the while, you will learn to know God better and better.**

<sup>11</sup> We also pray that you will be strengthened with his glorious power so that you will have all the patience and endurance you need. May you be filled with joy, <sup>12</sup> always thanking the Father, who has enabled you to share the inheritance that belongs to God's holy people, who live in the light. <sup>13</sup> For he has rescued us from the one who rules in the kingdom of darkness, and he has brought us into the Kingdom of his dear Son. <sup>14</sup> God has purchased our freedom with his blood and has forgiven all our sins.<sup>285</sup>

---

<sup>282</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>283</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>284</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>285</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

**Colossians Chapter 3 -***Living the New Life*

**3** Since you have been raised to new life with Christ, set your sights on the realities of heaven, where Christ sits at God's right hand in the place of honor and power. <sup>2</sup> **Let heaven fill your thoughts. Do not think only about things down here on earth.** <sup>3</sup> **For you died when Christ died, and your real life is hidden with Christ in God.** <sup>4</sup> **And when Christ, who is your real life, is revealed to the whole world, you will share in all his glory.**

<sup>5</sup> **So put to death the sinful, earthly things lurking within you. Have nothing to do with sexual sin, impurity, lust, and shameful desires. Don't be greedy for the good things of this life, for that is idolatry.** <sup>6</sup> **God's terrible anger will come upon those who do such things.** <sup>7</sup> **You used to do them when your life was still part of this world.** <sup>8</sup> **But now is the time to get rid of anger, rage, malicious behavior, slander, and dirty language.** <sup>9</sup> **Don't lie to each other, for you have stripped off your old evil nature and all its wicked deeds.** <sup>10</sup> **In its place you have clothed yourselves with a brand-new nature that is continually being renewed as you learn more and more about Christ, who created this new nature within you.** <sup>11</sup> In this new life, it doesn't matter if you are a Jew or a Gentile, circumcised or uncircumcised, barbaric, uncivilized, slave, or free. Christ is all that matters, and he lives in all of us.

<sup>12</sup> **Since God chose you to be the holy people whom he loves, you must clothe yourselves with tenderhearted mercy, kindness, humility, gentleness, and patience.** <sup>13</sup> **You must make allowance for each other's faults and forgive the person who offends you. Remember, the Lord forgave you, so you must forgive others.** <sup>14</sup> **And the most important piece of clothing you must wear is love. Love is what binds us all together in perfect harmony.** <sup>15</sup> **And let the peace that comes from Christ rule in your hearts. For as members of one body you are all called to live in peace. And always be thankful.**

<sup>16</sup> **Let the words of Christ, in all their richness, live in your hearts and make you wise. Use his words to teach and counsel each other. Sing psalms and hymns and spiritual songs to God with thankful hearts.** <sup>17</sup> **And whatever you do or say, let it be as a representative of the Lord Jesus, all the while giving thanks through him to God the Father.**

*Instructions for Christian Households*

<sup>18</sup> You wives must submit to your husbands, as is fitting for those who belong to the Lord.

<sup>19</sup> And you husbands must love your wives and never treat them harshly.

<sup>20</sup> You children must always obey your parents, for this is what pleases the Lord. <sup>21</sup> Fathers, don't aggravate your children. If you do, they will become discouraged and quit trying.

<sup>22</sup> You slaves must obey your earthly masters in everything you do. Try to please them all the time, not just when they are watching you. Obey them willingly because of your reverent fear of the Lord. <sup>23</sup> **Work hard and cheerfully at whatever you do, as though you were working for the Lord rather than for people.** <sup>24</sup> **Remember that the Lord will give you an inheritance as your reward, and the Master you are serving is**

**Christ. <sup>25</sup> But if you do what is wrong, you will be paid back for the wrong you have done. For God has no favorites who can get away with evil.<sup>286</sup>**

### **I Thessalonians 4:9-12 -**

<sup>9</sup> But I don't need to write to you about the Christian love\* that should be shown among God's people. For God himself has taught you to love one another. <sup>10</sup> Indeed, your love is already strong toward all the Christians in all of Macedonia. Even so, dear brothers and sisters, we beg you to love them more and more. <sup>11</sup> **This should be your ambition: to live a quiet life, minding your own business and working with your hands, just as we commanded you before.** <sup>12</sup> **As a result, people who are not Christians will respect the way you live, and you will not need to depend on others to meet your financial needs.<sup>287</sup>**

*So we see that living a life of selfishness is the way of the world. The world has followed the ways of the devil which are exemplified in the world's economic system that is based on credit. This banking system is symbolically referred to in the Bible as 'Babylon'. Babylon was the first society to establish the system of extending credit and the basis for today's banking system of commerce. The concept of credit, (which is 'having it today and paying for it tomorrow') is the epitome of impatience. As we saw above, PATIENCE is the first and most important characteristic of love. The world is impatient. This is the opposite of love and therefore the opposite of God. True Christians must be patient as God is patient. Buying things on credit is exemplary of selfishness as well. Wanting more worldly things and going to the extreme of obtaining those things on credit is the opposite of love and is 'idolatry' in God's eyes. As we said above, idolatry is an abomination to God and loving the things of the world is also considered as committing 'adultery' against God, (see Deuteronomy 27:15, Proverbs 16:5 and James chapter 4 above). During these end-times, we must 'come out of Babylon' so that we will not partake in its sins and God's judgment on it. God is about to punish 'Babylon' for its pride, selfishness and greed. Modern day 'Babylon' is represented by the United States and its first world allies, as well as any country who follows them and operates in the current banking system of credit, (see the teaching, 'Coming Out of Babylon', Habakkuk 2:2-20 and Revelation 18:1-8).*

### **Habakkuk 2:2-20 -**

*The LORD's Second Reply*

<sup>2</sup> Then the LORD said to me, "Write my answer in large, clear letters on a tablet, so that a runner can read it and tell everyone else. <sup>3</sup> But these things I plan won't happen right away. Slowly, steadily, surely, the time approaches when the vision will be fulfilled. If it seems slow, wait patiently, for it will surely take place. It will not be delayed.

---

<sup>286</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.*

<sup>287</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.*



<sup>4</sup>“Look at the proud! They trust in themselves, and their lives are crooked; but the righteous will live by their faith. <sup>5</sup>Wealth is treacherous, and the arrogant are never at rest. They range far and wide, with their mouths opened as wide as death, but they are never satisfied. In their greed they have gathered up many nations and peoples. <sup>6</sup>But the time is coming when all their captives will taunt them, saying, ‘You thieves! At last justice has caught up with you! Now you will get what you deserve for your oppression and extortion!’ <sup>7</sup>Suddenly, your debtors will rise up in anger. They will turn on you and take all you have, while you stand trembling and helpless. <sup>8</sup>You have plundered many nations; now they will plunder you. You murderers! You have filled the countryside with violence and all the cities, too.

<sup>9</sup>“How terrible it will be for you who get rich by unjust means! You believe your wealth will buy security, putting your families beyond the reach of danger. <sup>10</sup>But by the murders you committed, you have shamed your name and forfeited your lives. <sup>11</sup>The very stones in the walls of your houses cry out against you, and the beams in the ceilings echo the complaint.

<sup>12</sup>“How terrible it will be for you who build cities with money gained by murder and corruption! <sup>13</sup>Has not the LORD Almighty promised that the wealth of nations will turn to ashes? They work so hard, but all in vain! <sup>14</sup>For the time will come when all the earth will be filled, as the waters fill the sea, with an awareness of the glory of the LORD.

<sup>15</sup>“How terrible it will be for you who make your neighbors drunk! You force your cup on them so that you can gloat over their nakedness and shame. <sup>16</sup>But soon it will be your turn! Come, drink and be exposed! Drink from the cup of the LORD’s judgment, and all your glory will be turned to shame. <sup>17</sup>You cut down the forests of Lebanon. Now you will be cut down! You terrified the wild animals you caught in your traps. Now terror will strike you because of your murder and violence in cities everywhere!

<sup>18</sup>“What have you gained by worshiping all your man-made idols? How foolish to trust in something made by your own hands! What fools you are to believe such lies! <sup>19</sup>How terrible it will be for you who beg lifeless wooden idols to save you. You ask speechless stone images to tell you what to do. Can an idol speak for God? They may be overlaid with gold and silver, but they are lifeless inside. <sup>20</sup>But the LORD is in his holy Temple. Let all the earth be silent before him.”288

### **Revelation 18:1-8 -**

<sup>1</sup>After these things I saw another angel coming down from heaven, having great authority, and the earth was illuminated with his glory. <sup>2</sup>And he cried mightily with a loud voice, saying, “Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and has become a dwelling place of demons, a prison for every foul spirit, and a cage for every unclean and hated bird! <sup>3</sup>“For all the nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth have become rich through the abundance of her luxury.” <sup>4</sup>**And I heard another voice from heaven saying, “Come out of her, my people, lest you share in her sins, and lest**

you receive of her plagues. <sup>5</sup>“For her sins have reached to heaven, and God has remembered her iniquities. <sup>6</sup>“Render to her just as she rendered to you, and repay her double according to her works; in the cup which she has mixed, mix double for her. <sup>7</sup>“In the measure that she glorified herself and lived luxuriously, in the same measure give her torment and sorrow; for she says in her heart, ‘I sit *as queen*, and am no widow, and will not see sorrow.’ <sup>8</sup>“Therefore her plagues will come in one day—death and mourning and famine. And she will be utterly burned with fire, for strong is the Lord God who judges her.<sup>289</sup>

*It is only by OVERCOMING SELFISHNESS and living a life of LOVE and GENEROSITY that we will be able to escape the trouble that lies just ahead for ‘Babylon’ and her worldwide allies and to prepare for the kingdom of God, (see the teaching, ‘The Trouble that Lies Just Ahead’).*

#### **4. Money Issues vs. No Money Issues -**

*As we saw above, the love of money is the root of all kinds of evil and we also saw that pride is the root of every evil on earth. God created the system of money to give us something to overcome. He wants us to love Him more than money. If we love money or fear the lack of money more than we love or fear God, then that is idolatry and an abomination to God. Where we put our focus is where our heart is going to be, (Matthew 6:19-21 and Luke 16:1-18).*

#### **Matthew 6:19-21 -**

<sup>19</sup>“Do not lay up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust destroy and where thieves break in and steal; <sup>20</sup>“but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust destroys and where thieves do not break in and steal. <sup>21</sup>“**For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also.**<sup>290</sup>

#### **Luke 16:1-18 -**

*Story of the Shrewd Manager*

**16** Jesus told this story to his disciples: “A rich man hired a manager to handle his affairs, but soon a rumor went around that the manager was thoroughly dishonest. <sup>2</sup> So his employer called him in and said, ‘What’s this I hear about your stealing from me? Get your report in order, because you are going to be dismissed.’

<sup>3</sup> “The manager thought to himself, ‘Now what? I’m through here, and I don’t have the strength to go out and dig ditches, and I’m too proud to beg. <sup>4</sup> I know just the thing! And then I’ll have plenty of friends to take care of me when I leave!’

---

<sup>289</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>290</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>5</sup> “So he invited each person who owed money to his employer to come and discuss the situation. He asked the first one, ‘How much do you owe him?’ <sup>6</sup> The man replied, ‘I owe him eight hundred gallons of olive oil.’ So the manager told him, ‘Tear up that bill and write another one for four hundred gallons.’

<sup>7</sup> “ ‘And how much do you owe my employer?’ he asked the next man. ‘A thousand bushels of wheat,’ was the reply. ‘Here,’ the manager said, ‘take your bill and replace it with one for only eight hundred bushels.’

<sup>8</sup> “The rich man had to admire the dishonest rascal for being so shrewd. And it is true that the citizens of this world are more shrewd than the godly are. <sup>9</sup> I tell you, use your worldly resources to benefit others and make friends. In this way, your generosity stores up a reward for you in heaven.

<sup>10</sup> **“Unless you are faithful in small matters, you won’t be faithful in large ones. If you cheat even a little, you won’t be honest with greater responsibilities. <sup>11</sup> And if you are untrustworthy about worldly wealth, who will trust you with the true riches of heaven? <sup>12</sup> And if you are not faithful with other people’s money, why should you be trusted with money of your own?”**

<sup>13</sup> **“No one can serve two masters. For you will hate one and love the other, or be devoted to one and despise the other. You cannot serve both God and money.”**

<sup>14</sup> **The Pharisees, who dearly loved their money, naturally scoffed at all this. <sup>15</sup> Then he said to them, “You like to look good in public, but God knows your evil hearts. What this world honors is an abomination in the sight of God.**

<sup>16</sup> “Until John the Baptist began to preach, the laws of Moses and the messages of the prophets were your guides. But now the Good News of the Kingdom of God is preached, and eager multitudes are forcing their way in. <sup>17</sup> But that doesn’t mean that the law has lost its force in even the smallest point. It is stronger and more permanent than heaven and earth.

<sup>18</sup> **“Anyone who divorces his wife and marries someone else commits adultery, and anyone who marries a divorced woman commits adultery.”<sup>291</sup>**

*In Luke 16:18 Jesus speaks of adultery and it seems unrelated to the associated scriptures that concern money, however when people love money, worldly wealth and material things more than they love God, then He considers it committing ‘adultery’ against Him. We also see here that if people are not faithful with money that does not belong to them, (particularly God’s money in the form of tithes) then they will NOT be given money of their own and will thus suffer financial lack. These are the main reasons that people who claim to be Christian have financial problems, (see James 4:1-10 above and Malachi 3:6-12).*

### **Malachi 3:6-12 -**

<sup>6</sup> “For I *am* the LORD, I do not change;  
Therefore you are not consumed, O sons of Jacob.  
<sup>7</sup> Yet from the days of your fathers

You have gone away from My ordinances  
 And have not kept *them*.  
 Return to Me, and I will return to you,”  
 Says the LORD of hosts.  
 “But you said,  
 ‘In what way shall we return?’  
 8       **“Will a man rob God?  
 Yet you have robbed Me!  
 But you say,  
 ‘In what way have we robbed You?’  
 In tithes and offerings.**  
 9       **You are cursed with a curse,  
 For you have robbed Me,  
 Even this whole nation.**  
 10       **Bring all the tithes into the storehouse,  
 That there may be food in My house,  
 And try Me now in this,”**  
 Says the LORD of hosts,  
**“If I will not open for you the windows of heaven  
 And pour out for you *such* blessing  
 That *there will not be room enough to receive it.***  
 11       **“And I will rebuke the devourer for your sakes,  
 So that he will not destroy the fruit of your ground,  
 Nor shall the vine fail to bear fruit for you in the field,”**  
 Says the LORD of hosts;  
 12       **“And all nations will call you blessed,  
 For you will be a delightful land,”**  
 Says the LORD of hosts.<sup>292</sup>

*People have MONEY ISSUES because they do not believe God or obey Him, (i.e., they lack faith). If people would simply trust God and believe that He will take good care of them in the area of finance and if they would obey Him in tithing and being faithful with His money, (i.e., put God first) then they would have NO MONEY ISSUES, (see Matthew 6:24-34 above).*

*In another translation...*

#### **Matthew 6:24-34 -**

<sup>24</sup> **“No one can serve two masters. For you will hate one and love the other, or be devoted to one and despise the other. You cannot serve both God and money.**

<sup>25</sup> **“So I tell you, don’t worry about everyday life—whether you have enough food, drink, and clothes. Doesn’t life consist of more than food and clothing? <sup>26</sup> Look at the**

---

<sup>292</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.*

birds. They don't need to plant or harvest or put food in barns because your heavenly Father feeds them. And you are far more valuable to him than they are.<sup>27</sup> Can all your worries add a single moment to your life? Of course not.

<sup>28</sup> "And why worry about your clothes? Look at the lilies and how they grow. They don't work or make their clothing,<sup>29</sup> yet Solomon in all his glory was not dressed as beautifully as they are.<sup>30</sup> **And if God cares so wonderfully for flowers that are here today and gone tomorrow, won't he more surely care for you? You have so little faith!**

<sup>31</sup> **"So don't worry about having enough food or drink or clothing.<sup>32</sup> Why be like the pagans who are so deeply concerned about these things? Your heavenly Father already knows all your needs,<sup>33</sup> and he will give you all you need from day to day if you live for him and make the Kingdom of God your primary concern.**

<sup>34</sup> "So don't worry about tomorrow, for tomorrow will bring its own worries. Today's trouble is enough for today.<sup>293</sup>

*So we see that we must put God and His kingdom first and foremost in our thoughts, hearts and actions for God to give us everything we need. If someone lacks something, they should pray and ask for God to open their eyes as to where they fall short of these principles and help them correct the err of their ways. Then they must pray with a believing heart and God will provide them whatever they need. We also saw in the above section on selfishness vs. generosity that in order to have more, we must give more. **Again, that is why it is more blessed to give than to receive, because the more we give, we are sowing seeds of generosity and by the 'seedtime and harvest principle', we will have those gifts multiplied back to us.** We should not give in order to receive, but we should KNOW that this is a law of God in the earth that will remain as long as the earth remains, (see Genesis 8:22 above). We also saw in Matthew 19:21 above that if we truly want to be perfect, then we need to dedicate ALL that we possess to God and follow Jesus. In this way, we will put God above all that we have in the world and He will know that we love Him more than things. Once God is convinced of our love for Him by the faith that we show to Him in obeying His Word, He will give us every good thing we need and we will have NO MONEY ISSUES. God provides abundantly for those who believe in Him, trust Him, obey Him and submit to His ways no matter what. These are the people who dwell in 'Zion'. Jesus gave up His place in the throne room of God, humbled Himself, came in human form, suffered and died so that we could be well provided for even in this life, (see Psalm 36:7-8, chapter 65, 132:13-18, Matthew 7:7-11, John 10:10, II Corinthians 8:9, Ephesians 3:14-21 and Philippians 2:5-11).*

### **Psalm 36:7-8 -**

<sup>7</sup> How precious *is* Your lovingkindness, O God!  
Therefore the children of men put their trust under the shadow of Your wings.

<sup>8</sup> **They are abundantly satisfied with the fullness of Your house,**

**And You give them drink from the river of Your pleasures.**<sup>294</sup>

**Psalm Chapter 65 -**

**65** *For the choir director: A psalm of David. A song.*

- 1**           What mighty praise, O God,  
              **belongs to you in Zion.**
- 2**           **We will fulfill our vows to you,**  
              **for you answer our prayers,**
- 3**           **and to you all people will come.**  
              **Though our hearts are filled with sins,**
- 4**           **you forgive them all.**  
              **What joy for those you choose to bring near,**  
              **those who live in your holy courts.**
- 5**           **What joys await us**  
              **inside your holy Temple.**
- 6**           **You faithfully answer our prayers with awesome deeds,**  
              **O God our savior.**
- 7**           **You are the hope of everyone on earth,**  
              **even those who sail on distant seas.**
- 8**           You formed the mountains by your power  
              and armed yourself with mighty strength.
- 9**           You quieted the raging oceans  
              with their pounding waves  
              and silenced the shouting of the nations.
- 10**          Those who live at the ends of the earth  
              stand in awe of your wonders.  
              From where the sun rises to where it sets,  
              you inspire shouts of joy.
- 11**          You take care of the earth and water it,  
              making it rich and fertile.  
              The rivers of God will not run dry;  
              they provide a bountiful harvest of grain,  
              for you have ordered it so.
- 12**          You drench the plowed ground with rain,  
              melting the clods and leveling the ridges.  
              You soften the earth with showers  
              and bless its abundant crops.
- 13**          You crown the year with a bountiful harvest;  
              even the hard pathways overflow with abundance.
- 14**          The wilderness becomes a lush pasture,

---

<sup>294</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

and the hillsides blossom with joy.  
<sup>13</sup> The meadows are clothed with flocks of sheep,  
 and the valleys are carpeted with grain.  
 They all shout and sing for joy!<sup>295</sup>

**Psalm 132:13-18 -**

<sup>13</sup> For the LORD has chosen Zion;  
 He has desired *it* for His dwelling place:  
<sup>14</sup> “This *is* My resting place forever;  
 Here I will dwell, for I have desired it.  
<sup>15</sup> **I will abundantly bless her provision;  
 I will satisfy her poor with bread.**  
<sup>16</sup> I will also clothe her priests with salvation,  
 And her saints shall shout aloud for joy.  
<sup>17</sup> There I will make the horn of David grow;  
 I will prepare a lamp for My Anointed.  
<sup>18</sup> His enemies I will clothe with shame,  
 But upon Himself His crown shall flourish.”<sup>296</sup>

**Matthew 7:7-11 -**

<sup>7</sup>“Ask, and it will be given to you; seek, and you will find; knock, and it will be opened to you. <sup>8</sup>“For everyone who asks receives, and he who seeks finds, and to him who knocks it will be opened. <sup>9</sup>“Or what man is there among you who, if his son asks for bread, will give him a stone? <sup>10</sup>“Or if he asks for a fish, will he give him a serpent? <sup>11</sup>“**If you then, being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father who is in heaven give good things to those who ask Him!**<sup>297.</sup>

**John 10:10 -**

<sup>10</sup>“The thief does not come except to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. **I have come that they may have life, and that they may have *it* more abundantly.**<sup>298</sup>

**II Corinthians 8:9 -**

---

<sup>295</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>296</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>297</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>298</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>9</sup>For you know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, **that though He was rich, yet for your sakes He became poor, that you through His poverty might become rich.**<sup>299</sup>

### **Ephesians 3:14-21 -**

<sup>14</sup>For this reason I bow my knees to the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, <sup>15</sup>from whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named, <sup>16</sup>that He would grant you, according to the riches of His glory, to be strengthened with might through His Spirit in the inner man, <sup>17</sup>that Christ may dwell in your hearts through faith; that you, being rooted and grounded in love, <sup>18</sup>may be able to comprehend with all the saints what *is* the width and length and depth and height— <sup>19</sup>to know the love of Christ which passes knowledge; that you may be filled with all the fullness of God. <sup>20</sup>**Now to Him who is able to do exceedingly abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that works in us,** <sup>21</sup>**to Him be glory in the church by Christ Jesus to all generations, forever and ever.** Amen.<sup>300</sup>

### **Philippians 2:5-11 -**

#### *Christ's Humility and Exaltation*

<sup>5</sup>Your attitude should be the same that Christ Jesus had. <sup>6</sup>Though he was God, he did not demand and cling to his rights as God. <sup>7</sup>He made himself nothing; he took the humble position of a slave and appeared in human form. <sup>8</sup>**And in human form he obediently humbled himself even further by dying a criminal's death on a cross.** <sup>9</sup>**Because of this, God raised him up to the heights of heaven and gave him a name that is above every other name,** <sup>10</sup>**so that at the name of Jesus every knee will bow, in heaven and on earth and under the earth,** <sup>11</sup>**and every tongue will confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.**<sup>301</sup>

### **5. Darkness vs. Light -**

*We saw above in the section on fear vs. faith that in Jesus was life and that life, (which is His blood that represents the love of the Father) is the LIGHT of the world. The light of the life in Jesus is the thing that sets us free from the DARKNESS of the world and the darkness that resides in our hearts, (see John 1:4-5, 3:16-21 and I John 1:7-10 above). The Bible says in Genesis 1:3 that God said, "Let there be light." Then the 'light' came into the earth again after the fall of Lucifer that had created darkness into the earth. This light represented the kingdom of light which at that time included, Jesus, the Holy Spirit and all the good angels. Now this **kingdom of light** includes all the true people of God through Jesus Christ. When God separated the light from the darkness and called the*

---

<sup>299</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.*

<sup>300</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.*

<sup>301</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.*



*light 'Day' and the darkness 'Night', this was the first 'day' of the re-creation 'week'. Thus God put order into the spiritual realm before He began to restore the face of the earth and create the natural realm. The sun, moon and stars were not created until the fourth day, (see Genesis 1:3-5 and Vv. 14-19).*

### **Genesis 1:3-5 -**

<sup>3</sup>**Then God said, “Let there be light”; and there was light.** <sup>4</sup>And God saw the light, that *it was* good; and God divided the light from the darkness. <sup>5</sup>God called the light Day, and the darkness He called Night. **So the evening and the morning were the first day.**<sup>302</sup>

### **Genesis 1:14-19 -**

<sup>14</sup>Then God said, “Let there be lights in the firmament of the heavens to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs and seasons, and for days and years; <sup>15</sup>“and let them be for lights in the firmament of the heavens to give light on the earth”; and it was so. <sup>16</sup>**Then God made two great lights: the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night. He made the stars also.** <sup>17</sup>God set them in the firmament of the heavens to give light on the earth, <sup>18</sup>and to rule over the day and over the night, and to divide the light from the darkness. And God saw that *it was* good. <sup>19</sup>**So the evening and the morning were the fourth day.**<sup>303</sup>

*Therefore from the beginning of the earth's restoration after the fall of Lucifer, God set apart the kingdom of light from the kingdom of darkness. Those who obey God and follow Christ through Him become members of the kingdom of light and are therefore children of God and His light or love, (see John 12:35-50 above). The true Christians who are the children of the light will know and receive the truth of God as revealed by the Holy Spirit. They will OVERCOME DARKNESS and walk in the LIGHT. These people will understand the plan of God, especially concerning end-time events and how this plan will play out in the earth and for mankind. They will NOT be fooled by fairy tales and doctrines of demons such as the concept of a 'pre-tribulation rapture', as those who are living in darkness, (see the teaching, 'Why the Flesh', I Thessalonians 5:1-11 and II Timothy 4:1-5).*

### **I Thessalonians 5:1-11 -**

<sup>1</sup>But concerning the times and the seasons, brethren, you have no need that I should write to you. <sup>2</sup>For you yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so comes as a thief in the night. <sup>3</sup>For when they say, “Peace and safety!” then sudden destruction comes upon them, as labor pains upon a pregnant woman. And they shall not escape. <sup>4</sup>**But you,**

---

<sup>302</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.*

<sup>303</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.*

**brethren, are not in darkness, so that this Day should overtake you as a thief. <sup>5</sup>You are all sons of light and sons of the day. We are not of the night nor of darkness. <sup>6</sup>Therefore let us not sleep, as others *do*, but let us watch and be sober. <sup>7</sup>For those who sleep, sleep at night, and those who get drunk are drunk at night. <sup>8</sup>But let us who are of the day be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love, and *as a helmet the hope of salvation.* <sup>9</sup>For God did not appoint us to wrath, but to obtain salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ, <sup>10</sup>who died for us, that whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with Him. <sup>11</sup>Therefore comfort each other and edify one another, just as you also are doing.**<sup>304</sup>

## II Timothy 4:1-5 -

<sup>1</sup>I charge *you* therefore before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, who will judge the living and the dead at His appearing and His kingdom: <sup>2</sup>Preach the word! Be ready in season *and* out of season. Convince, rebuke, exhort, with all longsuffering and teaching. <sup>3</sup>**For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but according to their own desires, *because they have itching ears, they will heap up for themselves teachers; <sup>4</sup>and they will turn *their ears away from the truth, and be turned aside to fables.**** <sup>5</sup>But you be watchful in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, fulfill your ministry.<sup>305</sup>

*LIGHT is therefore equivalent to the LOVE of God and is ORDER. Even in the natural realm the science of physics tells us that light is pure energy in a very orderly array. If pure white light is passed through a crystal prism it turns into a rainbow. The rainbow represents Christ and God's covenant with man after the flood of Noah. Darkness is the dipolar opposite. DARKNESS is DISORDER and the children of darkness are full of PRIDE, ENVY, HATRED, LIES and VIOLENCE. Anyone who lives in darkness will NOT be able to walk in the love of God through Christ, whether or not they call themselves Christian. These evil people will live in the world of pride, lies, disorder, greed, selfishness, hatred and the violence that stems from such things. These people will spew forth evil words from their evil hearts. They will be unable to bring themselves to be kind and loving because they reject the only true way into the kingdom of light, which is through Christ and living according to His principles and commands. The love of God through Christ will become a stumbling block for them and they will end up in destruction and eventually in the lake of fire. Only those who through Christ OVERCOME DARKNESS and enter into the kingdom of LIGHT will be allowed to live in the New Jerusalem with God forever. The members of the two opposing kingdoms will be at odds with one another until the kingdom of God is set up in the New Jerusalem and those who live in darkness are cast into the lake of fire after Judgment Day. Often those who claim to be Christian are the very ones who are really children of the devil and persecute the true children of the light. Whatever reward they have in this life will be the*

---

<sup>304</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>305</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

*only reward they will ever have. However in the end of time as we know it, just before the great tribulation, God will deliver His true, pure, perfected Christian children from the great trouble that will come upon the other, less faithful children of the light at the hands of the Antichrist and his followers, who are children of the devil and darkness, (see Proverbs 4:14-19, 18:21, Matthew 12:34-37, 15:18-20, Mark 7:20-23, Luke 6:43-46, 16:19-31, I Corinthians 1:23-25, Revelation 20:1-21-8 above, Genesis 9:12-17, Psalm chapter 11, chapter 55, chapters 58-59, chapter 73, Proverbs 10:6-7, Vv. 11-14, Vv. 19-21, 13:2-3, 21:2-8, 24:1-2, Ezekiel 1:26-28, Revelation 4:2-3 and 10:1).*

### **Genesis 9:12-17 -**

<sup>12</sup>And God said: “This *is* the sign of the covenant which I make between Me and you, and every living creature that *is* with you, for perpetual generations: <sup>13</sup>**I set My rainbow in the cloud, and it shall be for the sign of the covenant between Me and the earth.** <sup>14</sup>**It shall be, when I bring a cloud over the earth, that the rainbow shall be seen in the cloud;** <sup>15</sup>**and I will remember My covenant which *is* between Me and you and every living creature of all flesh; the waters shall never again become a flood to destroy all flesh.** <sup>16</sup>“The rainbow shall be in the cloud, and I will look on it to remember the everlasting covenant between God and every living creature of all flesh that *is* on the earth.” <sup>17</sup>And God said to Noah, “This *is* the sign of the covenant which I have established between Me and all flesh that *is* on the earth.”<sup>306</sup>

### **Psalm Chapter 11 -**

#### **Psalm 11**

To the Chief Musician. A Psalm of David.

- <sup>1</sup> In the LORD I put my trust;  
How can you say to my soul,  
“Flee *as* a bird to your mountain”?
- <sup>2</sup> For look! The wicked bend *their* bow,  
They make ready their arrow on the string,  
That they may shoot secretly at the upright in heart.
- <sup>3</sup> If the foundations are destroyed,  
What can the righteous do?
- <sup>4</sup> The LORD *is* in His holy temple,  
The LORD’s throne *is* in heaven;  
His eyes behold,  
His eyelids test the sons of men.
- <sup>5</sup> **The LORD tests the righteous,  
But the wicked and the one who loves violence His soul hates.**
- <sup>6</sup> **Upon the wicked He will rain coals;  
Fire and brimstone and a burning wind  
Shall be the portion of their cup.**

7           **For the LORD is righteous,  
He loves righteousness;  
His countenance beholds the upright.**<sup>307</sup>

## Psalm Chapter 55 -

### Psalm 55

To the Chief Musician. With stringed instruments. A Contemplation of David.

1           Give ear to my prayer, O God,  
And do not hide Yourself from my supplication.  
2           Attend to me, and hear me;  
I am restless in my complaint, and moan noisily,  
3           Because of the voice of the enemy,  
Because of the oppression of the wicked;  
For they bring down trouble upon me,  
And in wrath they hate me.  
4           My heart is severely pained within me,  
And the terrors of death have fallen upon me.  
5           Fearfulness and trembling have come upon me,  
And horror has overwhelmed me.  
6           **So I said, “Oh, that I had wings like a dove!  
I would fly away and be at rest.  
7           Indeed, I would wander far off,  
And remain in the wilderness. Selah  
8           I would hasten my escape  
From the windy storm *and* tempest.”**  
9           **Destroy, O Lord, *and* divide their tongues,  
For I have seen violence and strife in the city.  
10          Day and night they go around it on its walls;  
Iniquity and trouble *are* also in the midst of it.  
11          Destruction *is* in its midst;  
Oppression and deceit do not depart from its streets.  
12          For *it is* not an enemy *who* reproaches me;  
Then I could bear *it*.  
Nor *is it* one *who* hates me who has exalted *himself* against me;  
Then I could hide from him.  
13          But *it was* you, a man my equal,  
My companion and my acquaintance.  
14          We took sweet counsel together,  
And walked to the house of God in the throng.  
15          Let death seize them;  
Let them go down alive into hell,  
For wickedness *is* in their dwellings *and* among them.**

---

<sup>307</sup>The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

16 As for me, I will call upon God,  
 And the LORD shall save me.  
 17 Evening and morning and at noon  
 I will pray, and cry aloud,  
 And He shall hear my voice.  
 18 He has redeemed my soul in peace from the battle *that was* against  
 me,  
 For there were many against me.  
 19 God will hear, and afflict them,  
 Even He who abides from of old. Selah  
 Because they do not change,  
 Therefore they do not fear God.  
 20 He has put forth his hands against those who were at peace with him;  
 He has broken his covenant.  
 21 *The words* of his mouth were smoother than butter,  
 But war *was* in his heart;  
 His words were softer than oil,  
 Yet they *were* drawn swords.  
 22 **Cast your burden on the LORD,  
 And He shall sustain you;  
 He shall never permit the righteous to be moved.**  
 23 **But You, O God, shall bring them down to the pit of destruction;  
 Bloodthirsty and deceitful men shall not live out half their days;  
 But I will trust in You.**308

### Psalm Chapters 58-59 -

#### Psalm 58

To the Chief Musician. Set to "Do Not Destroy." A Michtam of David.

1 Do you indeed speak righteousness, you silent ones?  
 Do you judge uprightly, you sons of men?  
 2 **No, in heart you work wickedness;  
 You weigh out the violence of your hands in the earth.**  
 3 **The wicked are estranged from the womb;  
 They go astray as soon as they are born, speaking lies.**  
 4 Their poison *is* like the poison of a serpent;  
*They are* like the deaf cobra *that* stops its ear,  
 5 Which will not heed the voice of charmers,  
 Charming ever so skillfully.  
 6 Break their teeth in their mouth, O God!  
 Break out the fangs of the young lions, O LORD!  
 7 Let them flow away as waters *which* run continually;  
*When* he bends *his* bow,

Let his arrows be as if cut in pieces.  
 8       *Let them be* like a snail which melts away as it goes,  
*Like* a stillborn child of a woman, that they may not see the sun.  
 9       **Before your pots can feel *the burning thorns,***  
**He shall take them away as with a whirlwind,**  
**As in His living and burning wrath.**  
 10       **The righteous shall rejoice when he sees the vengeance;**  
**He shall wash his feet in the blood of the wicked,**  
 11       **So that men will say,**  
**“Surely *there is* a reward for the righteous;**  
**Surely He is God who judges in the earth.”**

### Psalm 59

To the Chief Musician. Set to “Do Not Destroy.” A Michtam of David when Saul sent men, and they watched the the house in order to kill him.

1       **Deliver me from my enemies, O my God;**  
**Defend me from those who rise up against me.**  
 2       **Deliver me from the workers of iniquity,**  
**And save me from bloodthirsty men.**  
 3       **For look, they lie in wait for my life;**  
**The mighty gather against me,**  
**Not *for* my transgression nor *for* my sin, O LORD.**  
 4       **They run and prepare themselves through no fault *of mine.***  
**Awake to help me, and behold!**  
 5       **You therefore, O LORD God of hosts, the God of Israel,**  
**Awake to punish all the nations;**  
**Do not be merciful to any wicked transgressors. Selah**  
 6       At evening they return,  
They growl like a dog,  
And go all around the city.  
 7       Indeed, they belch with their mouth;  
Swords *are* in their lips;  
For *they say*, “Who hears?”  
 8       But You, O LORD, shall laugh at them;  
You shall have all the nations in derision.  
 9       I will wait for You, *O You* his Strength;  
For God *is* my defense;  
 10       My God of mercy shall come to meet me;  
God shall let me see *my desire* on my enemies.  
 11       Do not slay them, lest my people forget;  
Scatter them by Your power,  
And bring them down,  
O Lord our shield.  
 12       ***For* the sin of their mouth *and* the words of their lips,**  
**Let them even be taken in their pride,**  
**And for the cursing and lying *which* they speak.**

13       **Consume *them* in wrath, consume *them*,  
That they *may not be*;  
And let them know that God rules in Jacob  
To the ends of the earth. Selah**

14       And at evening they return,  
They growl like a dog,  
And go all around the city.

15       They wander up and down for food,  
And howl if they are not satisfied.

16       But I will sing of Your power;  
Yes, I will sing aloud of Your mercy in the morning;  
For You have been my defense  
And refuge in the day of my trouble.

17       To You, O my Strength, I will sing praises;  
For God *is* my defense,  
My God of mercy.<sup>309</sup>

### Psalm Chapter 73 -

#### Psalm 73

A Psalm of Asaph.

1       **Truly God *is* good to Israel,  
To such as are pure in heart.**

2       **But as for me, my feet had almost stumbled;  
My steps had nearly slipped.**

3       **For I *was* envious of the boastful,  
When I saw the prosperity of the wicked.**

4       **For *there are* no pangs in their death,  
But their strength *is* firm.**

5       **They *are* not in trouble *as other* men,  
Nor are they plagued like *other* men.**

6       **Therefore pride serves as their necklace;  
Violence covers them *like* a garment.**

7       **Their eyes bulge with abundance;  
They have more than heart could wish.**

8       **They scoff and speak wickedly *concerning* oppression;  
They speak loftily.**

9       **They set their mouth against the heavens,  
And their tongue walks through the earth.**

10       **Therefore his people return here,  
And waters of a full *cup* are drained by them.**

11       **And they say, "How does God know?  
And is there knowledge in the Most High?"**

---

<sup>309</sup>The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

12       **Behold, these *are* the ungodly,**  
           **Who are always at ease;**  
           **They increase *in* riches.**  
 13       Surely I have cleansed my heart *in* vain,  
           And washed my hands in innocence.  
 14       For all day long I have been plagued,  
           And chastened every morning.  
 15       If I had said, “I will speak thus,”  
           Behold, I would have been untrue to the generation of Your children.  
 16       When I thought *how* to understand this,  
           It *was* too painful for me—  
 17       **Until I went into the sanctuary of God;**  
           **Then I understood their end.**  
 18       **Surely You set them in slippery places;**  
           **You cast them down to destruction.**  
 19       **Oh, how they are *brought* to desolation, as in a moment!**  
           **They are utterly consumed with terrors.**  
 20       **As a dream when *one* awakes,**  
           **So, Lord, when You awake,**  
           **You shall despise their image.**  
 21       Thus my heart was grieved,  
           And I was vexed in my mind.  
 22       I *was* so foolish and ignorant;  
           I *was* *like* a beast before You.  
 23       Nevertheless I *am* continually with You;  
           You hold *me* by my right hand.  
 24       You will guide me with Your counsel,  
           And afterward receive me *to* glory.  
 25       Whom have I in heaven *but* You?  
           And *there is* none upon earth *that* I desire besides You.  
 26       My flesh and my heart fail;  
           *But* God *is* the strength of my heart and my portion forever.  
 27       For indeed, those who are far from You shall perish;  
           You have destroyed all those who desert You for harlotry.  
 28       But *it is* good for me to draw near to God;  
           I have put my trust in the Lord GOD,  
 That I may declare all Your works.<sup>310</sup>

### Proverbs 10:6-7 -

6       Blessings *are* on the head of the righteous,  
           But violence covers the mouth of the wicked.  
 7       The memory of the righteous *is* blessed,



But the name of the wicked will rot.311

**Proverbs 10:11-14 -**

<sup>11</sup>        **The mouth of the righteous *is* a well of life,  
But violence covers the mouth of the wicked.**

<sup>12</sup>        **Hatred stirs up strife,  
But love covers all sins.**

<sup>13</sup>        Wisdom is found on the lips of him who has understanding,  
But a rod *is* for the back of him who is devoid of understanding.

<sup>14</sup>        Wise *people* store up knowledge,

But the mouth of the foolish *is* near destruction.312

**Proverbs 10:19-21 -**

<sup>19</sup>        **In the multitude of words sin is not lacking,  
But he who restrains his lips *is* wise.**

<sup>20</sup>        The tongue of the righteous *is* choice silver;  
The heart of the wicked *is* worth little.

<sup>21</sup>        The lips of the righteous feed many,

But fools die for lack of wisdom.313

**Proverbs 13:2-3 -**

<sup>2</sup>        A man shall eat well by the fruit of *his* mouth,  
But the soul of the unfaithful feeds on violence.

<sup>3</sup>        He who guards his mouth preserves his life,

But he who opens wide his lips shall have destruction.314

**Proverbs 21:2-8 -**

<sup>2</sup>        Every way of a man *is* right in his own eyes,  
But the LORD weighs the hearts.

<sup>3</sup>        **To do righteousness and justice  
*Is* more acceptable to the LORD than sacrifice.**

<sup>4</sup>        **A haughty look, a proud heart,  
*And* the plowing of the wicked *are* sin.**

---

311 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

312 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

313 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

314 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>5</sup>       **The plans of the diligent *lead* surely to plenty,**  
**But *those of* everyone *who is* hasty, surely to poverty.**  
<sup>6</sup>       **Getting treasures by a lying tongue**  
***Is* the fleeting fantasy of those who seek death.**  
<sup>7</sup>       **The violence of the wicked will destroy them,**  
 Because they refuse to do justice.  
<sup>8</sup>       The way of a guilty man *is* perverse;  
 But *as for* the pure, his work *is* right.<sup>315</sup>

#### **Proverbs 24:1-2 -**

<sup>1</sup>       Do not be envious of evil men,  
 Nor desire to be with them;  
<sup>2</sup>       For their heart devises violence,  
 And their lips talk of troublemaking.<sup>316</sup>

#### **Ezekiel 1:26-28 -**

<sup>26</sup>And above the firmament over their heads *was* the likeness of a throne, in appearance like a sapphire stone; on the likeness of the throne *was* a likeness with the appearance of a man high above it. <sup>27</sup>Also from the appearance of His waist and upward I saw, as it were, the color of amber with the appearance of fire all around within it; and from the appearance of His waist and downward I saw, as it were, the appearance of fire with brightness all around. <sup>28</sup>**Like the appearance of a rainbow in a cloud on a rainy day, so *was* the appearance of the brightness all around it. This *was* the appearance of the likeness of the glory of the LORD.** So when I saw *it*, I fell on my face, and I heard a voice of One speaking.<sup>317</sup>

#### **Revelation 4:2-3 -**

<sup>2</sup>Immediately I was in the Spirit; and behold, a throne set in heaven, and *One* sat on the throne. <sup>3</sup>And He who sat there was like a jasper and a sardius stone in appearance; **and *there was* a rainbow around the throne, in appearance like an emerald.**<sup>318</sup>

#### **Revelation 10:1 - (*This 'angel' is Christ*) -**

---

315 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

316 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

317 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

318 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>1</sup>I saw still another mighty angel coming down from heaven, clothed with a cloud. And a **rainbow was on his head**, his face was like the sun, and his feet like pillars of fire.<sup>319</sup>

*So we see that DARKNESS is DISORDER and EVIL. We must OVERCOME this darkness to be able to walk in the LIGHT, which is the LOVE of God. This will be established by the way we live and the words that come out of our mouth. These words will either condemn us or vindicate us in the Day of Judgment. We must endeavor to have God clean up our hearts with His light or love and then He will be able to help us control our tongues so that we bring forth only light from the wisdom of God in the words that we say, (see Matthew 12:33-36 and James chapter 3 above).*

## **6. Discontent vs. Contentment -**

*As true children of God we must learn to be happy no matter what. Though he had everything, it was through his DISCONTENTMENT that Lucifer rebelled against God. The Bible teaches us that we need to accept our situation, regardless of our circumstances, until God decides to change them. This does not mean that we should let the devil destroy our lives, but rather that we need to learn to pray about things, be patient and wait on the Lord to help us in our times of need. By OVERCOMING discontentment and learning to be CONTENT with whatever situation that we find ourselves in, we will become acceptable to God and we will prove to Him that we can be trusted to be content with what He gives us for eternity. On the contrary, people who constantly want more prove to God that He may NOT be able to trust them to be content for eternity with what He decides to give them. This is where learning to praise God in the midst of suffering comes in handy. If we can be like the apostles and encourage God's people as well as praise God even while in prison or suffering for doing the right thing, then we will have accomplished something in our lives, (see Philippians 4:6-7, I Timothy chapter 6 above, Ecclesiastes 7:8-14, Philippians 4:10-13, I Timothy 6:6-10 NLT and Hebrews 13:1-17).*

## **Ecclesiastes 7:8-14 -**

<sup>8</sup> Better is the end of speech than its beginning;

**better is the patient spirit than the lofty spirit.**

<sup>9</sup> **Do not in spirit become quickly discontented,**

**for discontent lodges in the bosom of a fool.**

<sup>10</sup> Do not say: How is it that former times were better than these?

For it is not in wisdom that you ask about this.

<sup>11</sup> Wisdom and an inheritance are good,

and an advantage to those that see the sun.

<sup>12</sup> For the protection of wisdom is as the protection of money; and the advantage of knowledge is that wisdom preserves the life of its owner.

<sup>13</sup> Consider the work of God. Who can make straight what he has made crooked?

---

<sup>319</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.*

**<sup>14</sup> On a good day enjoy good things, and on an evil day consider: Both the one and the other God has made, so that man cannot find fault with him in anything.<sup>320</sup>**

**Philippians 4:10-13 -**

<sup>10</sup>But I rejoiced in the Lord greatly that now at last your care for me has flourished again; though you surely did care, but you lacked opportunity. <sup>11</sup>**Not that I speak in regard to need, for I have learned in whatever state I am, to be content:** <sup>12</sup>**I know how to be abased, and I know how to abound. Everywhere and in all things I have learned both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer need.** <sup>13</sup>**I can do all things through Christ who strengthens me.<sup>321</sup>**

**I Timothy 6:6-10 -**

<sup>6</sup>**Yet true religion with contentment is great wealth.** <sup>7</sup>**After all, we didn't bring anything with us when we came into the world, and we certainly cannot carry anything with us when we die.** <sup>8</sup>**So if we have enough food and clothing, let us be content.** <sup>9</sup>But people who long to be rich fall into temptation and are trapped by many foolish and harmful desires that plunge them into ruin and destruction. <sup>10</sup>For the love of money is at the root of all kinds of evil. And some people, craving money, have wandered from the faith and pierced themselves with many sorrows.<sup>322</sup>

**Hebrews 13:1-17 -**

<sup>1</sup>Let brotherly love continue. <sup>2</sup>Do not forget to entertain strangers, for by so *doing* some have unwittingly entertained angels. <sup>3</sup>Remember the prisoners as if chained with them—those who are mistreated—since you yourselves are in the body also. <sup>4</sup>Marriage *is* honorable among all, and the bed undefiled; but fornicators and adulterers God will judge. <sup>5</sup>*Let your conduct be* without covetousness; ***be content with such things as you have.*** For He Himself has said, "I will never leave you nor forsake you." <sup>6</sup>So we may boldly say:

"The LORD *is* my helper;  
I will not fear.  
What can man do to me?"

<sup>7</sup>Remember those who rule over you, who have spoken the word of God to you, whose faith follow, considering the outcome of *their* conduct. <sup>8</sup>Jesus Christ *is* the same yesterday, today, and forever. <sup>9</sup>Do not be carried about with various and strange doctrines. For *it is* good that the heart be established by grace, not with foods which have not profited those who have been occupied with them. <sup>10</sup>We have an altar from which

---

<sup>320</sup>*The New American Bible*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Confraternity of Christian Doctrine) 1997.

<sup>321</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>322</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

those who serve the tabernacle have no right to eat. <sup>11</sup>For the bodies of those animals, whose blood is brought into the sanctuary by the high priest for sin, are burned outside the camp. <sup>12</sup>Therefore Jesus also, that He might sanctify the people with His own blood, suffered outside the gate. <sup>13</sup>Therefore let us go forth to Him, outside the camp, bearing His reproach. <sup>14</sup>For here we have no continuing city, but we seek the one to come. <sup>15</sup>Therefore by Him let us continually offer the sacrifice of praise to God, that is, the fruit of *our* lips, giving thanks to His name. <sup>16</sup>But do not forget to do good and to share, for with such sacrifices God is well pleased. <sup>17</sup>**Obey those who rule over you, and be submissive, for they watch out for your souls, as those who must give account. Let them do so with joy and not with grief, for that would be unprofitable for you.**<sup>323</sup>

### **7. Laziness vs. Being Industrious -**

*It is human nature to like a short cut. People want to get to the end of something via the quickest, easiest possible route. This was the line of thinking that led Eve and Adam to commit the first sin that got all of us into trouble with God. The short cut to God's knowledge and thus stealing His 'glory' through eating the forbidden fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, is what led to all the misery in this world. This is NOT God's way; it is the way of Satan. The short cut is the way of LAZINESS that Lucifer tried to take in his misguided attempt to steal the throne of God. We need to OVERCOME laziness and learn by the grace or power of God, through Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit to become INDUSTRIOUS. We must learn not mind taking the long way through the 'wilderness', which is this life so that we can 'prepare' for the long haul of eternity. Through perfection in Christ, we can truly enter into God's rest. In that place, (which we call the 'life in Christ' that we live in 'Zion') though we rest, we can work for God to prepare for the rest of eternity. Our 'work' then comes from the will of the Father and really is not hard, because He will give us grace or power to get the job done. Then we will be wealthy both in this life and the next.*

*The Israelites were the chosen people of God in Old Testament times. They are symbolic of modern Christians. God only has one people, so with the changes that God made in the New Covenant through Christ, we are to walk the same walk that the Israelites of old did. We are modern 'Israelites' through Christ. God led the Israelites of the Old Testament times into bondage in Egypt, (which represents pride) so that He could deliver them under the direction of Moses, (who was symbolic of Jesus in the flesh). As we saw earlier, pride is the root of ALL evil on the planet and is the main characteristic that we need to overcome to prove to God that we deserve eternal life. What God did through and to the Israelites will serve as an example to us as to what we might expect, with some alterations in that we are supposed to be walking according to the Spirit of God and not the flesh, as the Israelites did. Though we are IN the world, we are supposed to look different compared to those who are OF this world. Our kingdom, the kingdom of God, is not of this world. Therefore, we are only 'pilgrims' or sojourners in this life on the way to the next. What we are truly working toward is our eternal reward through Christ. **It is***

---

<sup>323</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.*

***ONLY by finishing the work that God sent us here to do that we will truly glorify God.*** We will receive direction from God along the way through His written Word and when He speaks to us. We each have specific jobs to do for the body of Christ, which is the church of God. Jesus gave each one of us ministry gifts, in the form of apostle, prophet, evangelist, pastor and teacher so that with the use of these gifts, we can all become perfected in Christ. In order for us to do the work of God, we need to know what our ministry gifts are and get busy operating in them. If we heed the Word of God and obey it, then we do not have to suffer for our stupidity. However if God's people go astray, they will be punished accordingly, (mostly through sickness or financial lack) in an attempt from God to drive them away from sin and bring them back to Him. Those who succumb to laziness, refuse to obey God by operating in their given gifts to multiply them into the body of Christ and work for the kingdom of God will end up in the lake of fire, (see Deuteronomy chapter 8, John 17:20-26, I Corinthians 15:56-58, Galatians 3:26-29, Ephesians 4:11-16, I Timothy 4:6-11, Hebrews 11:13, I Peter Chapter 2, I John 5:1-5 above, Psalm chapter 84, 127:1-2, Proverbs 10:4, 10:16, 12:24, 13:4, 13:11, 14:23, 15:19, 18:9-10, 21:25, 24:30-34, 26:13-16, Matthew 11:25-30, 25:14-46, John 5:1-23, 6:26-40, 17:1-19, Romans chapter 12, I Corinthians chapter 3, Colossians 1:24-29, I Thessalonians 5:14, Hebrews chapters 3-4, 6:9-20, chapter 12 and Revelation 2:1-7).

## **Psalm Chapter 84 -**

### **Psalm 84**

To the Chief Musician. On an instrument of Gath. A Psalm of the sons of Korah.

- 1 How lovely is Your tabernacle,  
O LORD of hosts!
- 2 My soul longs, yes, even faints  
For the courts of the LORD;  
My heart and my flesh cry out for the living God.
- 3 Even the sparrow has found a home,  
And the swallow a nest for herself,  
Where she may lay her young—  
*Even Your altars, O LORD of hosts,  
My King and my God.*
- 4 Blessed *are* those who dwell in Your house;  
They will still be praising You. Selah
- 5 **Blessed is the man whose strength is in You,  
Whose heart is set on pilgrimage.**
- 6 ***As they pass through the Valley of Baca,  
They make it a spring;  
The rain also covers it with pools.***
- 7 **They go from strength to strength;  
*Each one appears before God in Zion.***
- 8 O LORD God of hosts, hear my prayer;  
Give ear, O God of Jacob! Selah
- 9 O God, behold our shield,

And look upon the face of Your anointed.  
<sup>10</sup> For a day in Your courts *is* better than a thousand.  
 I would rather be a doorkeeper in the house of my God  
 Than dwell in the tents of wickedness.  
<sup>11</sup> **For the LORD God *is* a sun and shield;  
 The LORD will give grace and glory;  
 No good *thing* will He withhold  
 From those who walk uprightly.**  
<sup>12</sup> O LORD of hosts,  
 Blessed *is* the man who trusts in You!<sup>324</sup>

**Psalm 127:1-2 -**

<sup>1</sup> Unless the LORD builds a house,  
 the work of the builders is useless.  
 Unless the LORD protects a city,  
 guarding it with sentries will do no good.  
<sup>2</sup> It is useless for you to work so hard  
 from early morning until late at night,  
 anxiously working for food to eat;  
 for God gives rest to his loved ones.<sup>325</sup>

**Proverbs 10:4 -**

<sup>4</sup> Lazy people are soon poor; hard workers get rich.<sup>326</sup>

**Proverbs 10:16 -**

<sup>16</sup> The labor of the righteous *leads* to life,  
 The wages of the wicked to sin.<sup>327</sup>

**Proverbs 12:24 -**

<sup>24</sup> Work hard and become a leader; be lazy and become a slave.<sup>328</sup>

---

<sup>324</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>325</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>326</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>327</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>328</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

**Proverbs 13:4 -**

<sup>4</sup> Lazy people want much but get little, but those who work hard will prosper and be satisfied.<sup>329</sup>

**Proverbs 13:11 -**

<sup>11</sup> Wealth *gained by* dishonesty will be diminished,  
But he who gathers by labor will increase.<sup>330</sup>

**Proverbs 14:23 -**

<sup>23</sup> In all labor there is profit,  
But idle chatter *leads* only to poverty.<sup>331</sup>

**Proverbs 15:19 -**

<sup>19</sup> A lazy person has trouble all through life; the path of the upright is easy!<sup>332</sup>

**Proverbs 18:9-10 -**

<sup>9</sup> A lazy person is as bad as someone who destroys things.  
<sup>10</sup> The name of the LORD is a strong fortress; the godly run to him and are safe.<sup>333</sup>

**Proverbs 21:25 -**

<sup>25</sup> The desires of lazy people will be their ruin, for their hands refuse to work. <sup>26</sup> They are always greedy for more, while the godly love to give!<sup>334</sup>

**Proverbs 24:30-34 -**

<sup>30</sup> I walked by the field of a lazy person, the vineyard of one lacking sense. <sup>31</sup> I saw that it was overgrown with thorns. It was covered with weeds, and its walls were broken down.

---

329 *Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

330 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

331 *The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

332 *Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

333 *Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

334 *Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.



<sup>32</sup> Then, as I looked and thought about it, I learned this lesson: <sup>33</sup> A little extra sleep, a little more slumber, a little folding of the hands to rest—<sup>34</sup> and poverty will pounce on you like a bandit; scarcity will attack you like an armed robber.<sup>335</sup>

### Proverbs 26:13-16 -

<sup>13</sup> The lazy person is full of excuses, saying, “I can’t go outside because there might be a lion on the road! Yes, I’m sure there’s a lion out there!”

<sup>14</sup> As a door turns back and forth on its hinges, so the lazy person turns over in bed.

<sup>15</sup> Some people are so lazy that they won’t lift a finger to feed themselves.

<sup>16</sup> Lazy people consider themselves smarter than seven wise counselors.<sup>336</sup>

### Matthew 11:25-30 -

<sup>25</sup> At that time Jesus answered and said, “I thank You, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that You have hidden these things from *the* wise and prudent and have revealed them to babes. <sup>26</sup>“Even so, Father, for so it seemed good in Your sight. <sup>27</sup>“All things have been delivered to Me by My Father, and no one knows the Son except the Father. Nor does anyone know the Father except the Son, and *the one* to whom the Son wills to reveal Him. <sup>28</sup>“**Come to Me, all you who labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.** <sup>29</sup>“**Take My yoke upon you and learn from Me, for I am gentle and lowly in heart, and you will find rest for your souls.** <sup>30</sup>“**For My yoke is easy and My burden is light.**”<sup>337</sup>

### Matthew 25:14-46 -

#### *Story of the Three Servants*

<sup>14</sup> “Again, the Kingdom of Heaven can be illustrated by the story of a man going on a trip. He called together his servants and gave them money to invest for him while he was gone. <sup>15</sup> He gave five bags of gold to one, two bags of gold to another, and one bag of gold to the last—dividing it in proportion to their abilities—and then left on his trip. <sup>16</sup>

The servant who received the five bags of gold began immediately to invest the money and soon doubled it. <sup>17</sup> The servant with two bags of gold also went right to work and doubled the money. <sup>18</sup> But the servant who received the one bag of gold dug a hole in the ground and hid the master’s money for safekeeping.

<sup>19</sup> “After a long time their master returned from his trip and called them to give an account of how they had used his money. <sup>20</sup> The servant to whom he had entrusted the five bags of gold said, ‘Sir, you gave me five bags of gold to invest, and I have doubled the amount.’ <sup>21</sup> The master was full of praise. ‘Well done, my good and faithful servant.

---

<sup>335</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>336</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>337</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

You have been faithful in handling this small amount, so now I will give you many more responsibilities. Let's celebrate together!

<sup>22</sup> “Next came the servant who had received the two bags of gold, with the report, ‘Sir, you gave me two bags of gold to invest, and I have doubled the amount.’ <sup>23</sup> The master said, ‘Well done, my good and faithful servant. You have been faithful in handling this small amount, so now I will give you many more responsibilities. Let's celebrate together!’

<sup>24</sup> “Then the servant with the one bag of gold came and said, ‘Sir, I know you are a hard man, harvesting crops you didn't plant and gathering crops you didn't cultivate. <sup>25</sup> I was afraid I would lose your money, so I hid it in the earth and here it is.’

<sup>26</sup> **“But the master replied, ‘You wicked and lazy servant! You think I'm a hard man, do you, harvesting crops I didn't plant and gathering crops I didn't cultivate? <sup>27</sup> Well, you should at least have put my money into the bank so I could have some interest. <sup>28</sup> Take the money from this servant and give it to the one with the ten bags of gold. <sup>29</sup> To those who use well what they are given, even more will be given, and they will have an abundance. But from those who are unfaithful, even what little they have will be taken away. <sup>30</sup> Now throw this useless servant into outer darkness, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.’**

### *The Final Judgment*

<sup>31</sup> “But when the Son of Man comes in his glory, and all the angels with him, then he will sit upon his glorious throne. <sup>32</sup> All the nations will be gathered in his presence, and he will separate them as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats. <sup>33</sup> He will place the sheep at his right hand and the goats at his left. <sup>34</sup> Then the King will say to those on the right, ‘Come, you who are blessed by my Father, inherit the Kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world. <sup>35</sup> For I was hungry, and you fed me. I was thirsty, and you gave me a drink. I was a stranger, and you invited me into your home. <sup>36</sup> I was naked, and you gave me clothing. I was sick, and you cared for me. I was in prison, and you visited me.’

<sup>37</sup> “Then these righteous ones will reply, ‘Lord, when did we ever see you hungry and feed you? Or thirsty and give you something to drink? <sup>38</sup> Or a stranger and show you hospitality? Or naked and give you clothing? <sup>39</sup> When did we ever see you sick or in prison, and visit you?’ <sup>40</sup> And the King will tell them, ‘I assure you, when you did it to one of the least of these my brothers and sisters, you were doing it to me!’

<sup>41</sup> “Then the King will turn to those on the left and say, ‘Away with you, you cursed ones, into the eternal fire prepared for the Devil and his demons! <sup>42</sup> For I was hungry, and you didn't feed me. I was thirsty, and you didn't give me anything to drink. <sup>43</sup> I was a stranger, and you didn't invite me into your home. I was naked, and you gave me no clothing. I was sick and in prison, and you didn't visit me.’

<sup>44</sup> **“Then they will reply, ‘Lord, when did we ever see you hungry or thirsty or a stranger or naked or sick or in prison, and not help you?’ <sup>45</sup> And he will answer, ‘I assure you, when you refused to help the least of these my brothers and sisters, you**

were refusing to help me.’<sup>46</sup> **And they will go away into eternal punishment, but the righteous will go into eternal life.”**<sup>338</sup>

### John 5:1-23 -

<sup>1</sup>After this there was a feast of the Jews, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. <sup>2</sup>Now there is in Jerusalem by the Sheep *Gate* a pool, which is called in Hebrew, Bethesda, having five porches. <sup>3</sup>In these lay a great multitude of sick people, blind, lame, paralyzed, waiting for the moving of the water. <sup>4</sup>For an angel went down at a certain time into the pool and stirred up the water; then whoever stepped in first, after the stirring of the water, was made well of whatever disease he had. <sup>5</sup>Now a certain man was there who had an infirmity thirty-eight years. <sup>6</sup>When Jesus saw him lying there, and knew that he already had been *in that condition* a long time, He said to him, **“Do you want to be made well?”** <sup>7</sup>The sick man answered Him, “Sir, I have no man to put me into the pool when the water is stirred up; but while I am coming, another steps down before me.” <sup>8</sup>Jesus said to him, **“Rise, take up your bed and walk.”** <sup>9</sup>And immediately the man was made well, took up his bed, and walked. And that day was the Sabbath. <sup>10</sup>The Jews therefore said to him who was cured, “It is the Sabbath; it is not lawful for you to carry *your* bed.” <sup>11</sup>He answered them, “He who made me well said to me, **“Take up your bed and walk.”**” <sup>12</sup>Then they asked him, “Who is the Man who said to you, **“Take up your bed and walk?”**” <sup>13</sup>But the one who was healed did not know who it was, for Jesus had withdrawn, a multitude being in *that* place. <sup>14</sup>Afterward Jesus found him in the temple, and said to him, **“See, you have been made well. Sin no more, lest a worse thing come upon you.”** <sup>15</sup>The man departed and told the Jews that it was Jesus who had made him well.

<sup>16</sup>For this reason the Jews persecuted Jesus, and sought to kill Him, because He had done these things on the Sabbath. <sup>17</sup>**But Jesus answered them, “My Father has been working until now, and I have been working.”** <sup>18</sup>**Therefore the Jews sought all the more to kill Him, because He not only broke the Sabbath, but also said that God was His Father, making Himself equal with God.** <sup>19</sup>Then Jesus answered and said to them, **“Most assuredly, I say to you, the Son can do nothing of Himself, but what He sees the Father do; for whatever He does, the Son also does in like manner.** <sup>20</sup>**“For the Father loves the Son, and shows Him all things that He Himself does; and He will show Him greater works than these, that you may marvel.** <sup>21</sup>**“For as the Father raises the dead and gives life to *them*, even so the Son gives life to whom He will.** <sup>22</sup>**“For the Father judges no one, but has committed all judgment to the Son,** <sup>23</sup>**“that all should honor the Son just as they honor the Father. He who does not honor the Son does not honor the Father who sent Him.**”<sup>339</sup>

### John 6:26-40 -

---

<sup>338</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>339</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>26</sup>Jesus answered them and said, “Most assuredly, I say to you, you seek Me, not because you saw the signs, but because you ate of the loaves and were filled. <sup>27</sup>“**Do not labor for the food which perishes, but for the food which endures to everlasting life, which the Son of Man will give you, because God the Father has set His seal on Him.**” <sup>28</sup>Then they said to Him, “What shall we do, that we may work the works of God?” <sup>29</sup>Jesus answered and said to them, “**This is the work of God, that you believe in Him whom He sent.**” <sup>30</sup>Therefore they said to Him, “What sign will You perform then, that we may see it and believe You? What work will You do? <sup>31</sup>“Our fathers ate the manna in the desert; as it is written, ‘He gave them bread from heaven to eat.’” <sup>32</sup>Then Jesus said to them, “Most assuredly, I say to you, Moses did not give you the bread from heaven, but My Father gives you the true bread from heaven. <sup>33</sup>“For the bread of God is He who comes down from heaven and gives life to the world.” <sup>34</sup>Then they said to Him, “Lord, give us this bread always.” <sup>35</sup>**And Jesus said to them, “I am the bread of life. He who comes to Me shall never hunger, and he who believes in Me shall never thirst. <sup>36</sup>“But I said to you that you have seen Me and yet do not believe. <sup>37</sup>“All that the Father gives Me will come to Me, and the one who comes to Me I will by no means cast out. <sup>38</sup>“For I have come down from heaven, not to do My own will, but the will of Him who sent Me. <sup>39</sup>“This is the will of the Father who sent Me, that of all He has given Me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up at the last day. <sup>40</sup>“And this is the will of Him who sent Me, that everyone who sees the Son and believes in Him may have everlasting life; and I will raise him up at the last day.”**<sup>340</sup>

#### John 17:1-19 -

<sup>1</sup>Jesus spoke these words, lifted up His eyes to heaven, and said: “Father, the hour has come. Glorify Your Son, that Your Son also may glorify You, <sup>2</sup>“as You have given Him authority over all flesh, that He should give eternal life to as many as You have given Him. <sup>3</sup>“**And this is eternal life, that they may know You, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom You have sent. <sup>4</sup>“I have glorified You on the earth. I have finished the work which You have given Me to do. <sup>5</sup>“And now, O Father, glorify Me together with Yourself, with the glory which I had with You before the world was.**

<sup>6</sup>“I have manifested Your name to the men whom You have given Me out of the world. They were Yours, You gave them to Me, and they have kept Your word. <sup>7</sup>“Now they have known that all things which You have given Me are from You. <sup>8</sup>“For I have given to them the words which You have given Me; and they have received *them*, and have known surely that I came forth from You; and they have believed that You sent Me. <sup>9</sup>“I pray for them. I do not pray for the world but for those whom You have given Me, for they are Yours. <sup>10</sup>“And all Mine are Yours, and Yours are Mine, and I am glorified in them. <sup>11</sup>“Now I am no longer in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to You. Holy Father, keep through Your name those whom You have given Me, that they may be one as *We are*. <sup>12</sup>“While I was with them in the world, I kept them in Your name. Those whom You gave Me I have kept; and none of them is lost except the son of perdition, that the Scripture might be fulfilled. <sup>13</sup>“**But now I come to You, and these things I speak in**

**the world, that they may have My joy fulfilled in themselves. <sup>14</sup>“I have given them Your word; and the world has hated them because they are not of the world, just as I am not of the world. <sup>15</sup>“I do not pray that You should take them out of the world, but that You should keep them from the evil one. <sup>16</sup>“They are not of the world, just as I am not of the world. <sup>17</sup>“Sanctify them by Your truth. Your word is truth. <sup>18</sup>“As You sent Me into the world, I also have sent them into the world. <sup>19</sup>“And for their sakes I sanctify Myself, that they also may be sanctified by the truth.”<sup>341</sup>**

## Romans Chapter 12 -

### *A Living Sacrifice to God*

**12** And so, dear brothers and sisters, I plead with you to give your bodies to God. Let them be a living and holy sacrifice—the kind he will accept. When you think of what he has done for you, is this too much to ask? <sup>2</sup> **Don’t copy the behavior and customs of this world, but let God transform you into a new person by changing the way you think. Then you will know what God wants you to do, and you will know how good and pleasing and perfect his will really is.**

<sup>3</sup> **As God’s messenger, I give each of you this warning: Be honest in your estimate of yourselves, measuring your value by how much faith God has given you. <sup>4</sup>Just as our bodies have many parts and each part has a special function, <sup>5</sup> so it is with Christ’s body. We are all parts of his one body, and each of us has different work to do. And since we are all one body in Christ, we belong to each other, and each of us needs all the others.**

<sup>6</sup> **God has given each of us the ability to do certain things well. So if God has given you the ability to prophesy, speak out when you have faith that God is speaking through you. <sup>7</sup> If your gift is that of serving others, serve them well. If you are a teacher, do a good job of teaching. <sup>8</sup> If your gift is to encourage others, do it! If you have money, share it generously. If God has given you leadership ability, take the responsibility seriously. And if you have a gift for showing kindness to others, do it gladly.**

<sup>9</sup> **Don’t just pretend that you love others. Really love them. Hate what is wrong. Stand on the side of the good. <sup>10</sup> Love each other with genuine affection, and take delight in honoring each other. <sup>11</sup> Never be lazy in your work, but serve the Lord enthusiastically.**

<sup>12</sup> **Be glad for all God is planning for you. Be patient in trouble, and always be prayerful. <sup>13</sup> When God’s children are in need, be the one to help them out. And get into the habit of inviting guests home for dinner or, if they need lodging, for the night.**

<sup>14</sup> **If people persecute you because you are a Christian, don’t curse them; pray that God will bless them. <sup>15</sup> When others are happy, be happy with them. If they are sad, share their sorrow. <sup>16</sup> Live in harmony with each other. Don’t try to act important, but enjoy the company of ordinary people. And don’t think you know it all!**

---

<sup>341</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>17</sup> Never pay back evil for evil to anyone. Do things in such a way that everyone can see you are honorable. <sup>18</sup> Do your part to live in peace with everyone, as much as possible.

<sup>19</sup> Dear friends, never avenge yourselves. Leave that to God. For it is written,

“I will take vengeance;  
I will repay those who deserve it,”  
says the Lord.

<sup>20</sup> Instead, do what the Scriptures say:

“If your enemies are hungry, feed them.  
If they are thirsty, give them something to drink,  
and they will be ashamed of what they have done to you.”

<sup>21</sup> Don’t let evil get the best of you, but conquer evil by doing good.<sup>342</sup>

## I Corinthians Chapter 3 -

### Chapter 3

<sup>1</sup> And I, brethren, could not speak to you as to spiritual *people* but as to carnal, as to babes in Christ. <sup>2</sup> I fed you with milk and not with solid food; for until now you were not able *to receive it*, and even now you are still not able; <sup>3</sup> for you are still carnal. For where *there are* envy, strife, and divisions among you, are you not carnal and behaving like *mere* men? <sup>4</sup> For when one says, “I am of Paul,” and another, “I *am* of Apollos,” are you not carnal?

<sup>5</sup> Who then is Paul, and who *is* Apollos, but ministers through whom you believed, as the Lord gave to each one? <sup>6</sup> I planted, Apollos watered, but God gave the increase. <sup>7</sup> So then neither he who plants is anything, nor he who waters, but God who gives the increase. <sup>8</sup> Now he who plants and he who waters are one, and each one will receive his own reward according to his own labor. <sup>9</sup> **For we are God’s fellow workers; you are God’s field, *you are* God’s building.** <sup>10</sup> **According to the grace of God which was given to me, as a wise master builder I have laid the foundation, and another builds on it. But let each one take heed how he builds on it.** <sup>11</sup> **For no other foundation can anyone lay than that which is laid, which is Jesus Christ.** <sup>12</sup> **Now if anyone builds on this foundation *with* gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, straw,** <sup>13</sup> **each one’s work will become clear; for the Day will declare it, because it will be revealed by fire; and the fire will test each one’s work, of what sort it is.** <sup>14</sup> **If anyone’s work which he has built on *it* endures, he will receive a reward.** <sup>15</sup> **If anyone’s work is burned, he will suffer loss; but he himself will be saved, yet so as through fire.** <sup>16</sup> **Do you not know that you are the temple of God and *that* the Spirit of God dwells in you?** <sup>17</sup> **If anyone defiles the temple of God, God will destroy him. For the temple of God is holy, which *temple* you are.**

<sup>18</sup> Let no one deceive himself. If anyone among you seems to be wise in this age, let him become a fool that he may become wise. <sup>19</sup> For the wisdom of this world is

foolishness with God. For it is written, “He catches the wise in their *own* craftiness”;<sup>20</sup> and again, “The LORD knows the thoughts of the wise, that they are futile.”<sup>21</sup> Therefore let no one boast in men. For all things are yours:<sup>22</sup> whether Paul or Apollos or Cephas, or the world or life or death, or things present or things to come—all are yours.<sup>23</sup> And you *are* Christ’s, and Christ *is* God’s.<sup>343</sup>

### **Colossians 1:24-29 -**

<sup>24</sup>I now rejoice in my sufferings for you, and fill up in my flesh what is lacking in the afflictions of Christ, for the sake of His body, which is the church,<sup>25</sup> of which I became a minister according to the stewardship from God which was given to me for you, to fulfill the word of God,<sup>26</sup> the mystery which has been hidden from ages and from generations, but now has been revealed to His saints.<sup>27</sup> **To them God willed to make known what are the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles: which is Christ in you, the hope of glory.**<sup>28</sup> **Him we preach, warning every man and teaching every man in all wisdom, that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus.**<sup>29</sup> **To this end I also labor, striving according to His working which works in me mightily.**<sup>344</sup>

### **I Thessalonians 5:14 -**

<sup>14</sup> Brothers and sisters, **we urge you to warn those who are lazy.** Encourage those who are timid. Take tender care of those who are weak. Be patient with everyone.<sup>345</sup>

### **Hebrews Chapters 3-4 -**

#### **Chapter 3**

<sup>1</sup>Therefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the Apostle and High Priest of our confession, Christ Jesus,<sup>2</sup> who was faithful to Him who appointed Him, as Moses also *was faithful* in all His house.<sup>3</sup> For this One has been counted worthy of more glory than Moses, inasmuch as He who built the house has more honor than the house.<sup>4</sup> For every house is built by someone, but He who built all things *is* God.<sup>5</sup> And Moses indeed *was faithful* in all His house as a servant, for a testimony of those things which would be spoken *afterward*,<sup>6</sup> **but Christ as a Son over His own house, whose house we are if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm to the end.**

<sup>7</sup>Therefore, as the Holy Spirit says:

<sup>8</sup> **“Today, if you will hear His voice,  
Do not harden your hearts as in the rebellion,  
In the day of trial in the wilderness,**

---

<sup>343</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>344</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>345</sup>*Holy Bible, New Living Translation*, (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.) 1996.

<sup>9</sup>       **Where your fathers tested Me, tried Me,  
And saw My works forty years.**  
<sup>10</sup>       **Therefore I was angry with that generation,  
And said, ‘They always go astray in *their* heart,  
And they have not known My ways.’**  
<sup>11</sup>       **So I swore in My wrath,  
‘They shall not enter My rest.’ ”**

<sup>12</sup>**Beware, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief in departing from the living God; <sup>13</sup>but exhort one another daily, while it is called “Today,” lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin. <sup>14</sup>For we have become partakers of Christ if we hold the beginning of our confidence steadfast to the end, <sup>15</sup>while it is said:**

**“Today, if you will hear His voice,  
Do not harden your hearts as in the rebellion.”**

<sup>16</sup>**For who, having heard, rebelled? Indeed, *was it* not all who came out of Egypt, led by Moses? <sup>17</sup>Now with whom was He angry forty years? *Was it* not with those who sinned, whose corpses fell in the wilderness? <sup>18</sup>And to whom did He swear that they would not enter His rest, but to those who did not obey?**

<sup>19</sup>**So we see that they could not enter in because of unbelief.**

#### **Chapter 4**

<sup>1</sup>Therefore, since a promise remains of entering His rest, let us fear lest any of you seem to have come short of it. <sup>2</sup>For indeed the gospel was preached to us as well as to them; but the word which they heard did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in those who heard *it*. <sup>3</sup>For we who have believed do enter that rest, as He has said:

**“So I swore in My wrath,  
‘They shall not enter My rest,’ ”**

although the works were finished from the foundation of the world. <sup>4</sup>For He has spoken in a certain place of the seventh *day* in this way: “And God rested on the seventh day from all His works”; <sup>5</sup>and again in this *place*: “They shall not enter My rest.” <sup>6</sup>Since therefore it remains that some *must* enter it, and those to whom it was first preached did not enter because of disobedience, <sup>7</sup>again He designates a certain day, saying in David, “Today,” after such a long time, as it has been said:

**“Today, if you will hear His voice,  
Do not harden your hearts.”**

<sup>8</sup>**For if Joshua had given them rest, then He would not afterward have spoken of another day. <sup>9</sup>There remains therefore a rest for the people of God. <sup>10</sup>For he who has entered His rest has himself also ceased from his works as God *did* from His.**

<sup>11</sup>**Let us therefore be diligent to enter that rest, lest anyone fall according to the same example of disobedience. <sup>12</sup>For the word of God *is* living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the**



**heart.** <sup>13</sup>And there is no creature hidden from His sight, but all things *are* naked and open to the eyes of Him to whom we *must give* account.

<sup>14</sup>Seeing then that we have a great High Priest who has passed through the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast *our* confession. <sup>15</sup>For we do not have a High Priest who cannot sympathize with our weaknesses, but was in all *points* tempted as *we are*, yet without sin. <sup>16</sup>Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.<sup>346</sup>

### Hebrews 6:9-20 -

<sup>9</sup>But, beloved, we are confident of better things concerning you, yes, things that accompany salvation, though we speak in this manner. <sup>10</sup>**For God is not unjust to forget your work and labor of love which you have shown toward His name, in that you have ministered to the saints, and do minister.** <sup>11</sup>And we desire that each one of you show the same diligence to the full assurance of hope until the end, <sup>12</sup>that you do not become sluggish, but imitate those who through faith and patience inherit the promises.

<sup>13</sup>For when God made a promise to Abraham, because He could swear by no one greater, He swore by Himself, <sup>14</sup>saying, “Surely blessing I will bless you, and multiplying I will multiply you.” <sup>15</sup>And so, after he had patiently endured, he obtained the promise. <sup>16</sup>For men indeed swear by the greater, and an oath for confirmation *is* for them an end of all dispute. <sup>17</sup>Thus God, determining to show more abundantly to the heirs of promise the immutability of His counsel, confirmed *it* by an oath, <sup>18</sup>that by two immutable things, in which it *is* impossible for God to lie, we might have strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold of the hope set before *us*. <sup>19</sup>This *hope* we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and steadfast, and which enters the Presence *behind* the veil, <sup>20</sup>where the forerunner has entered for us, *even* Jesus, having become High Priest forever according to the order of Melchizedek.<sup>347</sup>

### Hebrews Chapter 12 -

#### Chapter 12

<sup>1</sup>Therefore we also, since we are surrounded by so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which so easily ensnares *us*, and let us run with endurance the race that is set before us, <sup>2</sup>looking unto Jesus, the author and finisher of *our* faith, who for the joy that was set before Him endured the cross, despising the shame, and has sat down at the right hand of the throne of God.

<sup>3</sup>For consider Him who endured such hostility from sinners against Himself, lest you become weary and discouraged in your souls. <sup>4</sup>You have not yet resisted to bloodshed, striving against sin. <sup>5</sup>And you have forgotten the exhortation which speaks to you as to sons:

---

<sup>346</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

<sup>347</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

“My son, do not despise the chastening of the LORD,  
Nor be discouraged when you are rebuked by Him;  
<sup>6</sup> For whom the LORD loves He chastens,  
And scourges every son whom He receives.”

<sup>7</sup>If you endure chastening, God deals with you as with sons; for what son is there whom a father does not chasten? <sup>8</sup>But if you are without chastening, of which all have become partakers, then you are illegitimate and not sons. <sup>9</sup>Furthermore, we have had human fathers who corrected *us*, and we paid *them* respect. Shall we not much more readily be in subjection to the Father of spirits and live? <sup>10</sup>For they indeed for a few days chastened *us* as seemed *best* to them, but He for *our* profit, that *we* may be partakers of His holiness. <sup>11</sup>Now no chastening seems to be joyful for the present, but painful; nevertheless, afterward it yields the peaceable fruit of righteousness to those who have been trained by it.

<sup>12</sup>Therefore strengthen the hands which hang down, and the feeble knees, <sup>13</sup>and make straight paths for your feet, so that what is lame may not be *dislocated*, but rather be healed. <sup>14</sup>Pursue peace with all *people*, and holiness, without which no one will see the Lord: <sup>15</sup>looking carefully lest anyone fall short of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up cause trouble, and by this many become defiled; <sup>16</sup>lest there *be* any fornicator or profane person like Esau, who for one morsel of food sold his birthright. <sup>17</sup>For you know that afterward, when he wanted to inherit the blessing, he was rejected, for he found no place for repentance, though he sought it diligently with tears.

<sup>18</sup>**For you have not come to the mountain that may be touched and that burned with fire, and to blackness and darkness and tempest, <sup>19</sup>and the sound of a trumpet and the voice of words, so that those who heard *it* begged that the word should not be spoken to them anymore. <sup>20</sup>(For they could not endure what was commanded: “And if so much as a beast touches the mountain, it shall be stoned or shot with an arrow.” <sup>21</sup>And so terrifying was the sight *that* Moses said, “I am exceedingly afraid and trembling.”) <sup>22</sup>But you have come to Mount Zion and to the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, to an innumerable company of angels, <sup>23</sup>to the general assembly and church of the firstborn *who are* registered in heaven, to God the Judge of all, to the spirits of just men made perfect, <sup>24</sup>to Jesus the Mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling that speaks better things than *that of* Abel.**

<sup>25</sup>See that you do not refuse Him who speaks. For if they did not escape who refused Him who spoke on earth, much more *shall we not escape* if we turn away from Him who *speaks* from heaven, <sup>26</sup>whose voice then shook the earth; but now He has promised, saying, “Yet once more I shake not only the earth, but also heaven.” <sup>27</sup>Now this, “Yet once more,” indicates the removal of those things that are being shaken, as of things that are made, that the things which cannot be shaken may remain. <sup>28</sup>Therefore, since we are receiving a kingdom which cannot be shaken, let us have grace, by which we may serve God acceptably with reverence and godly fear. <sup>29</sup>For our God *is* a consuming fire.<sup>348</sup>

## Revelation 2:1-7 -

<sup>1</sup>“To the angel of the church of Ephesus write,  
 ‘These things says He who holds the seven stars in His right hand, who walks in the  
 midst of the seven golden lampstands: <sup>2</sup>“**I know your works, your labor, your  
 patience, and that you cannot bear those who are evil. And you have tested those  
 who say they are apostles and are not, and have found them liars;** <sup>3</sup>“**and you have  
 persevered and have patience, and have labored for My name’s sake and have not  
 become weary.** <sup>4</sup>“Nevertheless I have *this* against you, that you have left your first love.  
<sup>5</sup>“Remember therefore from where you have fallen; repent and do the first works, or else  
 I will come to you quickly and remove your lampstand from its place—unless you repent.  
<sup>6</sup>“But this you have, that you hate the deeds of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate. <sup>7</sup>“**He  
 who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who  
 overcomes I will give to eat from the tree of life, which is in the midst of the Paradise  
 of God.**” ’<sup>349</sup>

*We see here that for those who overcome the temptation to become lazy in their walk with  
 God and who stick to or return to their first love of Christ and obedience to Him, there is  
 the reward of eternal life prepared for them. **PERSEVERANCE is patient endurance  
 during tribulation.** Trials and tribulations are what drive us toward eternal life, by the  
 grace of God through faith in Jesus Christ as our Lord and Savior. When we joyfully  
 work for the kingdom of God even during the trials of this life, then God knows that we  
 will continue in that same path for eternity. Also as we said above, those who make it far  
 enough down the path to perfection in Christ may be counted worthy to escape the soon  
 coming great tribulation. People who go astray from the industrious path toward  
 perfection, or never find it, will NOT be found worthy of the kingdom of God, (see the  
 teaching, ‘The Path to Perfection’, Revelation 3:10 above and Mark 13:3-37).*

### Mark 13:3-37 -

<sup>3</sup>Now as He sat on the Mount of Olives opposite the temple, Peter, James, John, and  
 Andrew asked Him privately, <sup>4</sup>“Tell us, when will these things be? And what *will be* the  
 sign when all these things will be fulfilled?” <sup>5</sup>And Jesus, answering them, began to say:  
 “Take heed that no one deceives you. <sup>6</sup>“For many will come in My name, saying, ‘I am  
 He,’ and will deceive many. <sup>7</sup>“But when you hear of wars and rumors of wars, do not be  
 troubled; for *such things* must happen, but the end *is* not yet. <sup>8</sup>“For nation will rise against  
 nation, and kingdom against kingdom. And there will be earthquakes in various places,  
 and there will be famines and troubles. These *are* the beginnings of sorrows. <sup>9</sup>“But watch  
 out for yourselves, for they will deliver you up to councils, and you will be beaten in the  
 synagogues. You will be brought before rulers and kings for My sake, for a testimony to  
 them. <sup>10</sup>“And the gospel must first be preached to all the nations. <sup>11</sup>“But when they arrest  
*you* and deliver you up, do not worry beforehand, or premeditate what you will speak.  
 But whatever is given you in that hour, speak that; for it is not you who speak, but the  
 Holy Spirit. <sup>12</sup>“Now brother will betray brother to death, and a father *his* child; and

---

<sup>349</sup>*The Holy Bible, New King James Version*, (Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson, Inc.) 1982.

children will rise up against parents and cause them to be put to death. <sup>13</sup>“And you will be hated by all for My name’s sake. But he who endures to the end shall be saved.

<sup>14</sup>“So when you see the ‘abomination of desolation,’ spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing where it ought not” (let the reader understand), “then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains. <sup>15</sup>“Let him who is on the housetop not go down into the house, nor enter to take anything out of his house. <sup>16</sup>“And let him who is in the field not go back to get his clothes. <sup>17</sup>“But woe to those who are pregnant and to those who are nursing babies in those days! <sup>18</sup>“And pray that your flight may not be in winter. <sup>19</sup>“For *in* those days there will be tribulation, such as has not been since the beginning of the creation which God created until this time, nor ever shall be. <sup>20</sup>“And unless the Lord had shortened those days, no flesh would be saved; but for the elect’s sake, whom He chose, He shortened the days. <sup>21</sup>“Then if anyone says to you, ‘Look, here *is* the Christ!’ or, ‘Look, *He is* there!’ do not believe it. <sup>22</sup>“For false christs and false prophets will rise and show signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the elect. <sup>23</sup>“But take heed; see, I have told you all things beforehand.

<sup>24</sup>“But in those days, after that tribulation, the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light; <sup>25</sup>“the stars of heaven will fall, and the powers in the heavens will be shaken. <sup>26</sup>“Then they will see the Son of Man coming in the clouds with great power and glory. <sup>27</sup>“And then He will send His angels, and gather together His elect from the four winds, from the farthest part of earth to the farthest part of heaven.

<sup>28</sup>“Now learn this parable from the fig tree: When its branch has already become tender, and puts forth leaves, you know that summer is near. <sup>29</sup>“So you also, when you see these things happening, know that it is near—at the doors! <sup>30</sup>“Assuredly, I say to you, this generation will by no means pass away till all these things take place. <sup>31</sup>“Heaven and earth will pass away, but My words will by no means pass away.

<sup>32</sup>“But of that day and hour no one knows, not even the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but only the Father. <sup>33</sup>“**Take heed, watch and pray; for you do not know when the time is.** <sup>34</sup>“***It is like a man going to a far country, who left his house and gave authority to his servants, and to each his work, and commanded the doorkeeper to watch.*** <sup>35</sup>“**Watch therefore, for you do not know when the master of the house is coming—in the evening, at midnight, at the crowing of the rooster, or in the morning—** <sup>36</sup>“**lest, coming suddenly, he find you sleeping.** <sup>37</sup>“**And what I say to you, I say to all: Watch!”**350

*It has therefore been the objective of this teaching to outline the demonic characteristics that are prevalent in the earth, as exhibited by the children of the devil which are evil. These characteristics are natural to humans through the ‘sin nature’ that is in the genetic code of the flesh and MUST be OVERCOME for people to enter into the kingdom of God. Through Jesus Christ and by the power of the Holy Spirit, we CAN overcome the evil characteristics that emanate from PRIDE and FEAR working together in the human flesh. With this help from God by operating in the wisdom, understanding and revelatory knowledge that comes from Him, we can learn to walk according to the Spirit of God and NOT fulfill the lusts of the flesh. In this way we can develop Godly eternal characteristics*

*through HUMILITY working together with FAITH that will make us worthy in God's eyes to be granted eternal life in His kingdom as children of the Most High God. Amen.*

---

**© 2009 Raymond D. Mossie, M.D.  
Adonai's Agape Through Jesus Christ Ministries**

**Websites:**

**[www.perfectchristian.110mb.com](http://www.perfectchristian.110mb.com)**  
**<http://perfectchristian.hostrator.com>**

**e-mail - [perfection777@live.com](mailto:perfection777@live.com)**